



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### **Usage guidelines**

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

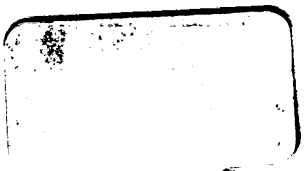
### **About Google Book Search**

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



3 3433 08184577 2



ITP  
BOSSU









# T R A V E L S

THROUGH THAT PART OF

NORTH AMERICA

FORMERLY CALLED

LOUISIANA.

BY MR. BOSSU, CAPTAIN IN THE  
FRENCH MARINES.

140 TRANSLATED FROM THE FRENCH,  
BY JOHN REINHOLD FORSTER, F.A.S.

ILLUSTRATED WITH NOTES RELATIVE CHIEFLY TO  
NATURAL HISTORY.

TO WHICH IS ADDED BY THE TRANSLATOR

A SYSTEMATIC CATALOGUE OF ALL THE  
KNOWN PLANTS OF ENGLISH NORTH-AMERICA,

OR, A

FLORA AMERICÆ SEPTENTRIONALIS.

TOGETHER WITH

AN ABSTRACT OF THE MOST USEFUL AND  
NECESSARY ARTICLES CONTAINED IN

PETER LOEFLING'S TRAVELS  
THROUGH SPAIN AND CUMANA IN SOUTH-AMERICA.

Referred to the Pages of the original Swedish Edition.

---

V O L. I.

---

Ornari res ipsa negat; contenta doceri. *Horat.*

---

L O N D O N :

Printed for T. DAVIES in Ruffel-Street, Covent-Garden.

M D C C L X X I.



Checked  
May 1913



T O

WILLIAM CONSTABLE, Esq;  
of BURTON-CONSTABLE.

S I R,

**T**HE zeal with which you promote the great cause of learning, and especially that of Natural History, the Polite Arts and Antiquities, intitle you to the regard and homage of every one who is conversant with Arts and Sciences: but the favour you were so kind to bestow upon me, before you proceeded on the tour through the different parts of Europe, encourages me to take this early opportunity to congratulate you on your return to your philosophic retirement, and publicly to acknowledge the gratitude and attachment which will ever prompt me to think myself happy in my weak endeavours to approve my conduct and sentiments to my friends and benefactors.

May

May you always enjoy perfect health, and all the rational and moral blessings of this life; and, after a long series of years, distinguished by actions of benevolence, friendship, and virtue, exchange these transitory enjoyments for everlasting felicity. These are the sincere and invariable wishes of him who subscribes himself, with the truest regard,

S. I. R,

Your most obliged

LONDON, Oct. 5.

1771.

obedient humble servant,

JOHN REINHOLD FORSTER.

## P R E F A C E.

**T**HE present publication appears with a view to supply the English reader with a good account of a country, which now enjoys the happiness to be under the mild influence and sway of the British sceptre; and, if properly administered and peopled, might in time become one of the great supports of that power, which makes *Great Britain* respected over all the globe. The country here described is susceptible of great improvements, capable to supply the mother-country with immense stores of raw materials for her manufactures, and to take in return the products of our industry; a commerce which, connected with religious and civil liberty, is the only basis on which the grandeur of this nation can be lastingly founded with any degree of probability.

The Catalogue of North American plants is a mere attempt, to make the curious more attentive to the American spontaneous products, and which will give a higher degree of certainty of success to the plantations of such plants as were recommended to the public, by the ingenious and great promoter of Natural History and Plantations *John Ellis, Esq;* in a *Catalogue of such foreign plants as are worthy of being encouraged in our American colonies for the purposes of medicine, agriculture, and commerce.*

The

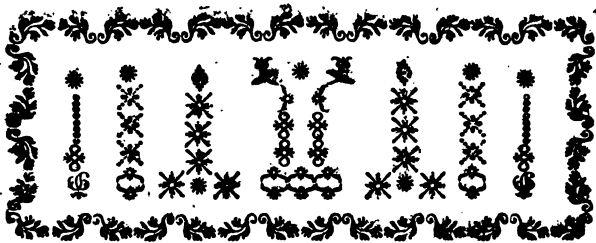


The English names affixed to the greater part of the plants, will make it more easy to the common people to know and to use them, bring the science more down even to the lowest capacities, fix the hitherto vague and multifarious denominations of plants in various parts of America, and obviate that confusion and dryness already too common in the study of that useful branch of knowledge.

*Loefling's* descriptions of the Spanish and South American plants are the only things in his journal which deserve the attention of a curious reader; the letters published along with them in the Swedish, are compliments of a grateful pupil to his tutor, and queries and *dubia* relative to botany, and therefore not worth a translation. The English public has now all the voyages and publications of the Linnæan school; *Hasselquist, Osbeck, Forcen, Kalm,* and *Loefling* make the whole of them.

The French word *outarde* signifies commonly a *bustard*, but in North America they give that name to a kind of geese, which I therefore beg to correct, vol. i. p. 96.; having but lately got an information about it, from a gentleman who is just returned from North America.

The *Sardines* mentioned vol. i. p. 2. are not, as I have suspected in the note, the *pilchards*, so common on our western coasts; but a kind of herring, not yet described, peculiar to the neighbourhood of *Belle-Isle*, and the coast of French Bretany.



T R A V E L S  
T H R O U G H  
L O U I S I A N A.



L E T T E R I.

To the MARQUIS de l'ESTRADE.

*The Author's Departure for America; Description of the Town of Cape François; Cruelties of the Spaniards towards the Natives of the Isle of St. Domingo; working of the Mines; true Origin of the Mal de Naples.*

WHEN I had the honour of taking my leave of you, I was ordered to communicate to you every particular that should appear remarkable to me in this new world; you farther desired of me an account of all interesting subjects which might happen on

Vol. I.

B

the

the passage. I am glad that my stay at *Cape François* affords me an opportunity of fulfilling an engagement which is dear to me, because its execution may prove agreeable to you.

I was at *Belle-Isle* in 1750, *M. Le Chevalier de Groffoles* commanded at that place; he gave me a letter from the Count *d'Argenson*, from which I learnt, that his Majesty had made me Lieutenant in the Marines; this Minister gave me orders to set out immediately for *Rochefort*; accordingly I went on board the first fishing smack destined to carry the Anchovies \* (*Sardines*) to *Rochelle*, which are caught on the Coast of *Bretany*, and which are the chief support of the inhabitants of *Belle-Isle*.

In

---

\* The true *Anchovies* are caught in the Mediterranean; and those few that now and then appear in the seas near *England* or *France*, are rather rare examples; they are certainly not so numerous that a profitable fishery of them could be instituted. The *Sardine* of our Author, therefore, seems to be the *Pilchard*, a fish that is very copiously caught on the coasts of *Cornwall* and *French Bretany*. *Linnaeus* has no peculiar specific name for this fish, though the great *English* natural historian, *Ray*, in his *Syn. pisc.* 104, had pointed out the characters of this species; which now is done more fully by *Mr. Pennant*, in his *British Zoology*, III. p. 291. F.

In November we weighed anchor before the *Palace*\*, (which is the name of the town on this island); and the very first night of our voyage we had such a violent storm on the coast of *Poitou*, that our little vessel being beat about and surrounded by the waves, we expected every moment to go to the bottom: The crew consisted of a pilot, and three sailors from Lower *Bretany*, who are commonly called *Sea-wolves* †; and are so well accustomed to this element, that they brave the hardest weather. The wind having increased, our captain was obliged to put in at the *Isle de Dieu*, situated between *Poitou* and the county *d'Aunis*. We staid there eight days; at the expiration of which, the sea being calmed, we set sail again, and continued our voyage to the Isle of *Rhé*; from whence I crossed a channel of the sea about three leagues broad, that separates the isle from the continent, and arrived at *Rochelle*, and the day after I came to *Rochefort*. I was directed to address myself to the intendant of the department of the marine, who is *M. le Normant de Mézi*, a man of real merit, and deserving of the place he occupies, by his talents and the goodness of his heart: he told me, that, as soon as I should have equipped myself for my voyage, I was to go to *Rochelle*,

B 2

and

\* Le Palais.

† *Loups de mer*.

#### 4 TRAVELS THROUGH

and embark in the ship called the *Pontchartrain*, of 400 tuns. M *le Normant* had freighted this ship for the King's account, in order to transport four companies of the marines, whom we took in at the citadel on the isle of *Rhé*: they were destined to reinforce the garrison of *New Orleans*.

We set sail from *Rochelle* the 26th of December, and had contrary winds for above a fortnight on the coast of Spain. We were already willing to put in at *Corunna*, in order to be sheltered from the violence of the winds; when happily the wind shifted; and, towards the end of January, we were in sight of *Madeira*, an isle belonging to *Portugal*\*; it is called the queen of islands, on account of its fertility and the excellence of its soil; it has near twenty leagues in circumference, produces good wines, and very fine fruits.

On the 15th of February we passed the tropic of Cancer. The next day the sailors spent in  
some

---

\* It is an African island in the Atlantic ocean, and situated to the north of the Canary islands; which latter were discovered in 1417, by a Norman gentleman called *Jean Bethencourt*, who bore the title of King of the Canaries, and made the conquest of them to the Spaniards, who possess them now.

some ridiculous ceremonies, which they oblige those to undergo who never passed the line before: they are baptised with sea-water; but may avoid this too abundant asperision by making a small present to the boatswain.

Two months after leaving *Rochelle* we arrived at *Cape François*, in the isle of *St. Domingo*; which is that part of *America* where the Spaniards have first built towns and forts.

The town lies at the bottom of a promontory: it is defended by a fort cut in the rock, at the entrance of the port. This fortress, which has a good store of artillery, projects into the sea; and by that means forms a cape, from whence the town takes its name. Its inhabitants are European merchants, Creoles, and negroes; the last being employed to cultivate sugar-canes, coffee, indigo, cacao, cotton, cassia, tobacco, and various other products.

The French and Spaniards have divided the island between them; the latter possess the western part of it\*. *San Domingo* is the capital of

B 3

the

---

\* Since that time the Spaniards have given their share of this island to the French. F.

the island; it is the seat of a bishop, whom the King of Spain appoints.

This island is celebrated by the origin of the *mal de Naples*, or venereal disease. Authors disagree so much on this subject, and have told the story in so many different ways, that I think I shall not do amiss to represent it in its true light.

*Nicolas de Obando* was governor of this isle, towards the end of the fifteenth century, during the reign of King *Ferdinand* of *Arragon* and *Isabella* of *Castile*: he had strict orders to work at the conversion of the subdued Indians; he distributed them among the Spaniards, giving a hundred of them to one man, fifty to another; and calling this proceeding a *repartimiento*, (a division). I believe you will agree with me, Sir, that this is a very singular method of making converts in *America*; such maxims are quite contrary to the true spirit of the Christian religion\*.

These

---

\* “ The King Don *Ferdinand*, being informed of these disorders, had turned all his attention towards remedying them; and his care chiefly regarded the Indians, whom he wished to protect and convert, as it has always been the maxim of the Catholic kings. He gave several orders, “ and

These Spaniards, greedy of gold, forced the wretched Indians to work in the mines, and kept them almost buried in the earth for eight or nine months together. This hard labour, the sulphureous vapours which continually rose from the mines, and the famine to which they were reduced by the impossibility of cultivating their grounds, so corrupted the mass of their blood, that their faces became tinged with a saffron colour; a kind of pustules came out on every part of their body, and caused them insupportable pains. They soon communicated this sickness to their wives, and so of course to their enemies; and they all perished for want of a remedy.

The afflicted Spaniards hoped; that this kind of pest would not follow them to *Europe*, whither they went for the change of air; but they were deceived; and, on their return, they gave the Europeans the distemper they got from the *Americans*.

B 4

How-

---

“ and published laws, that they should be instructed with  
 “ mildness, disinterestedness, and by example: but as an  
 “ arrow falls without force at the bottom of the aim, when  
 “ it is beyond the reach of the arm that shot it; so, all the  
 “ methods which he made use of to make his designs suc-  
 “ ceed, lost their force as they got to a greater distance.”

*Don Antonio de Solis.*



However, Providence pitied these wretched islanders: an Indian woman, the wife of a Spaniard, discovered, some time after, that a kind of wood called *guayacan*, was a sufficient cure for their distemper\*.

It is but too true, Sir, that evil produces evil. The Spaniards have sacrificed millions of men in the new world; they have laid waste countries of vast extent, in order to usurp the gold of the Indians.

Gold and silver give as much trouble and fatigue to those who work them out of the mines, as they afford contentment and ease to their possessors. A Spanish engineer told me, that twenty-nine years were spent in searching, in the mountains of *Potosi*, for the famous vein of *Cru-sero*, which is two hundred and fifty yards deep. Such is the hard and supernatural labour which power and desire of riches exacts, and which is executed

---

\* Notwithstanding what our author says concerning the origin of this disease, it is well known, that the inhabitants of South and North America had the disease when the Europeans came to them; but they well knew how to cure it, though they carefully kept this knowledge from their European enemies; and it has but lately been discovered, that in the south the *Guayacum*, and in the north the *Stillingia sylvatica*, together with other plants, are the Indian specifics. F.

executed by necessity and servitude, in order to extract gold from the bowels of the earth. The wretched workmen who are employed there, enjoy neither the air of our atmosphere, nor the light of the sun, and bury themselves in infectious and cold abyffes; of which the exhalations are so unwholesome, that they cause swoons and giddiness to the workmen as soon as they offer to go in. They make use of candles to light them in these dark subterraneous places: the metal is generally hard in them; they break it in pieces with hammers, load it on their shoulders, and mount upwards on ladders made of twisted hides of oxen, with wooden steps, contrived in such a manner, that whilst one goes up on one side, another may descend on the other: these ladders are divided into ten sets. A man generally carries two *arobas* of metal on his back\*, wrapped up in a piece of cloth: he that goes first has a candle fastened to his thumb; and they all hold themselves with both hands on the ladder, in order to be able to go upwards for the space of 250 feet.

The general history of *America* tells us, that the nations of *Florida* took the sacks with silver, and threw them far from themselves as useless. The *Mexicans*, on the contrary, were fond of gold;

---

\* An Aroba is 25 pounds, *poids de Marc*.

gold; though, as *Joseph d'Acoſta* ſays, in his univerſal hiſtory of the Indies, “ it is true that  
 “ their avarice was not arrived to that pitch  
 “ where ours is; and that, notwithstanding  
 “ their being idolaters, they never have worſhip-  
 “ ped gold and ſilver ſo much as ſome bad  
 “ Chriſtians have done, who have committed  
 “ the moſt atrocious crimes for the ſake of that  
 “ metal.”

The ſame author relates the following anecdote, which perfectly characterizes man's ſtupid deſire after riches. “ A Spaniſh monk, conſidering the height of the famous volcano of  
 “ *Guatimala*, took it into his head, that that  
 “ which he ſaw inflamed muſt needs be a maſs of  
 “ gold, ſince it had burnt for many ages together without being conſumed. Miſled by this  
 “ falſe principle, he invented ſome kettles,  
 “ chains, and other inſtruments, with which  
 “ he intended to draw the liquid gold from this  
 “ kind of well: but the fire diſappointed him;  
 “ for the chain and kettle were ſcarce entered  
 “ into this infernal orifice, but they immediately melted down. However,” ſays our author,  
 “ this man perſiſted in inventing new methods  
 “ for fetching up the gold after which he thirſted  
 “ ſo much; but one day happening to come too  
 “ near the mouth of the volcano, the exhalations  
 “ from

“ from it killed him, when he expected to have  
 “ succeeded in his whimsical design. Thus  
 “ blind mortals hasten their death by too great a  
 “ pursuit after the luxuries of this life.”

But to return to the Indians of *Saint Domingo*. The history of that isle informs us, that a *Cacique* \* called *Poncra*, being harassed by the Spaniards, resolved to flee from his village, which the enemies found abandoned, and where they took three thousand marks of gold, which had been left there. *Vasco Nunez de Balboa*, the successor of *Nicolas de Obando*, sent his people to the Cacique, with orders to assure him, that he should not fear to return, because he should be his friend; but that if he did not come back, he should go and hunt for him, and cause him to be devoured by his dogs †.

*Poncra*

---

\* A cacique is a petty prince or king of the Indians.

† The Spaniards had brought over with them from *Europe* some mastiffs, which they had taught to hunt the Indians; as soon as they were let loose upon these wretches, they tore out their bowels, and devoured them. One of these dogs called *Barémel* was very much dreaded all over the island; and though he was guarded by a shield against the arrows of the Indians, they, it is said, at last killed him, by piercing his eyes with darts, which was a kind of triumph for them.

*Antonio*

*Poncra* was frightened by his threats, and did not venture to disobey. He brought with him three of his vassals. *Nunex de Balboa* employed in vain all the cunning imaginable to bring him to discover the place where they got the gold, which he had heard contained great quantities of that metal: good usage and punishments were equally insufficient to bring him to confess what perhaps he did not know. As to the three thousand marks of gold which had been found, *Poncra* said, that those who had amassed them died in the times of his fathers, and that he had not thought it worth while to send people to search for more, having no need of it. This unhappy Cacique was given up to the fury of the dogs, that devoured him with his three companions.

Some time after, a Spaniard fell into the hands of the subjects of the unhappy *Poncra*; they reproached him with the excessive thirst of his countrymen after gold, and the injustices it led them

---

*Antonio de Herrera*, in his first *Decas*, relates, that this fierce creature, whose instinct was singular, guarded a narrow pass in the isle of *St. Domingo*; and that one day an Indian woman, being desirous of passing by him, addressed him in these words: *Signor Dog, do not hurt me; I carry this letter to the Christians*: he adds, that the dog immediately smelled at her, pissed at her, (those are his very words) and suffered her to pass without doing her any harm.

them to commit; that this avidity alone forced them from their country, and brought them across numberless perils to that island, to disturb its inhabitants, who lived peaceably before in their huts, under the protection of the *Great Spirit* \*.

After this short harangue, they melted some gold, and poured it into his mouth and ears, saying, *Thou dog, since thou art so willing to possess it, glut thyself.*

It must, however, be owned, Sir, that, if the Mexican history shews us nothing but horror, that of *St. Domingo*, on the other hand, furnishes us with instances of generosity.

*Don Pedro de Magaratit*, formerly a commandant here for the King of Spain, was offered a couple of living turtle-doves, by an Indian in a great famine. The general took them, paid the Indian handsomely for them, and begged part of the garrison to go with him to the highest part of the town; where, being arrived, he said to them, holding the little creatures in his hand, "Gentlemen, I am sorry that people  
" have

---

\* Thus the Indians call the Supreme Being.

“ have not brought me provisions sufficient to  
 “ treat you all ; I cannot resolve to satisfy my ap-  
 “ petite, whilst you are starving :” and as he  
 had spoke these words, he let the birds fly  
 away.

An infinite number of other instances may be added to this, which do no less honour to the inhabitants of this isle. There are several that deserve to be recorded in history ; and among those that I have been told, I cannot help thinking the following story worth your notice. An old inhabitant of St. Domingo had acquired a considerable fortune there by his labour, industry, and trade. His conduct and manners remained unaltered by prosperity ; and he only valued his riches, because they enabled him to serve others.

Whenever a ship arrived from France, he ran to the coast to see the passengers land, and generally conducted them to his home. One day he saw several young people, who expected to make their fortune as soon as they arrived ; they had letters of recommendation, on which they depended so much, that they took little notice of the good planter, who accosted them ; he left them, wishing them all kind of prosperity :  
 some

some time after he met them again looking very sad and discontented with the reception they had found. Gentlemen, says he to them, you are not recommended to me, and you did not rely on me. I am your fellow-creature, and you want assistance; come to my house, you will there find a table and a lodging at your service; and during that time perhaps something may offer, that will suit your inclinations. The young people were enraptured, and accepted his offers; they followed him to his house, where they found a table spread for twenty persons, and served by as many Negro servants. One of the new comers asked whether they were at a wedding, and was surprised to hear that this was nothing extraordinary. The master of the house kept them in his house for some time; his advices, and the pains he took about them, soon procured them very advantageous situations.

You will easily believe, Sir, that so good a master was loved and respected by all his slaves, who looked upon him as upon their father. This man was very far from being animated by the brutal avidity of some planters, that force their wretched slaves to such hard labour, that they refuse to marry, in order to avoid generating slaves to such masters, who treat them,  
when



when old and infirm, worse than their dogs and horses\*.

As to the inhabitants of the French islands in the West Indies, I can assure you they are very generous towards strangers: a person may even travel in the interior parts of the country, without the least expence to himself; if his countenance be free and open, and his behaviour decent, he is sufficiently qualified for a favourable reception in every habitation.

It is with great justice that we reckon the *Creoles* noble in France: their sentiments are so noble and delicate in every station of life, that they perfectly deserve that appellation.

Man is every where the same; he is equally susceptible of good and evil; education corrects his vices, but does not give him virtue; the  
same

---

\* I have seen a planter, whose name was *Chaperon*, who forced one of his negroes to go into a heated oven, where the poor wretch expired; and his jaws being shrivelled up, the barbarous *Chaperon* said, I believe the fellow laughs, and took a poker to stir him up. Since that time he is grown the scare-crow of all the slaves; who, when they have done something amiss, are threatened by their masters with, *I will sell thee to Chaperon*.

same Being has created the civilized man and the savage, and has endowed them with the same qualities, as you will find in the sequel of my correspondence. If I cannot amuse you with my stile, at least I shall make my narrative interesting, through the singularity of the facts I intend to relate.

I am, SIR, &c.

*Cape François, the 15th  
of February 1751.*



## L E T T E R    I I.

To the same.

*The Author's Departure from Cape François for Louisiana. Short Description of the Harbour of the Havannah. Of the famous Gulph of Mexico; and of New Orleans.*

S I R,

WE weighed anchor the 8th of March last; and on the 15th we were in sight of *Cuba*, which is the most temperate of all the *Antilles*. The *Havannah* is the store of all the riches of America, on account of its situation, and the extent and convenience of its harbour, which can contain upwards of a thousand ships. It is the common *rendez-vous* of the Spanish fleets returning to Europe; and it is defended by three forts. *Cuba* is two hundred leagues long, and between twenty-five and thirty broad; sixteen years have been spent in discoveries to ascertain whether it was an isle or continent:

continent: it lies under the tropic of Cancer, that is, in twenty-three degrees and a half north latitude. Near the middle of the island, to the southward, are a number of little isles very close to each other, which are called the Garden of the Queen\*.

During the equinox we suffered a very violent storm between Cape *Catoche* and Cape *Ansonio*; the latter, which we doubled on the twenty-third, is at the western point of the isle of *Cuba*. I was very sea-sick, having never been at sea on so long a voyage; but the desire of serving my country in a new land, sufficiently compensated all the hardships I underwent on my passage. The winds changed, the sea became smooth, and, a few days after, we entered into the famous gulph of *Mexico*, where we met with a prodigious quantity of floating timber, coming from *Louisiana* down the river *Mississippi*: these logs of wood are seen for above two hundred leagues at sea, and serve as guides to the entrance of the river in hazy and foggy weather; it being very difficult to get into it, on account of the rocks and shoals in the neighbourhood of its entrance.

---

\* Jardin de la Reyna.

In the first days of April we perceived the fort *Balise* at the mouth of the *Mississippi*. *M. le Moine d'Iberville*, a Canada gentleman, discovered, in 1698 \*, this mouth of the river, which *M. de la Salle* missed in 1684. Our vessel struck upon the bar; we fired a gun to call the pilot, and at the same time the captain disembarked the artillery of the ship, and the two hundred regular troops which were on board for the service of the colony of *Louisiana*; which made the vessel so much lighter, that she came afloat again.

On the 4th of April, we set on shore eighteen officers at Fort *Balise* †, where *M. de Sarrilly* commanded: this officer treated us to the best of his power, while we stayed at his post, which is entirely surrounded with marshes full of serpents and crocodiles.

The *Marquis de Vaudreuil*, governor of *Louisiana*, being informed of our arrival, sent several boats

---

\* *Mr. d'Iberville*, governor of *Louisiana*, conducted the first colony thither in 1699: after his death the country had no governor for a long while: the second was *M. de la Motte Cadillac*; and the third, *M. de Bienville*, youngest brother of the first.

† They reckon thirty leagues from this place to *New Orleans*, on account of the bendings in the river.

boats to fetch us, and to bring us refreshments; we distributed our soldiers on board them, and, by sailing and rowing, we got to *New Orleans* on Easter-day. The Marquis *de Vaudreuil* is to receive twenty-four companies of marines, to augment the forces in *Louisiana*; these troops come on board of merchant-ships, freighted for the King's account; there are likewise some female recruits enlisted in *France*, who come to people these climates. Industrious soldiers, who chuse to marry these girls, get their dismissal, and a certain number of acres of ground to cultivate: they get victuals from the King for three years together, and he makes them a present of half a pound of gun-powder, and two pounds of shot every month; of a gun, a hatchet, a pick-axe, and corn to sow their fields; with a cow, a calf, cocks and hens, &c.

The Marquis *de Vaudreuil* has distributed the twenty-four new companies in the different parts of the colony, without any regard to persons; so that every one may equally share the advantages and the disadvantages. As to the detachment near the *Illinois*, a post five hundred leagues distant from *New Orleans*, it has fallen to the share of the company to which I belong. I have the honour of being among the officers which M. *Rouillé*, the secretary of state for the marine,

has recommended to the Marquis *de Vaudreuil*; and I am made perfectly sensible of the deference shewn to such a recommendation. I can assure you, Sir, that the General's table is of great use to me, and to all those that are lately arrived, and have not had time to take any fixed lodgings. The affluence is very great; but the governor does the honours of his table in so noble and generous a manner, that he acquires the esteem and friendship of all the officers, who justly stile him the father of the colony. M. *Michel de la Rouvilliere*, who superintends the markets\*, likewise contributes to render life agreeable to us, by the just prices he fixes upon the victuals of the country, and by every thing relative to his office.

We expect to set out for the *Illinois* the 20th of August next; Mr. de *Macarty*, who is to go with us, has been appointed commandant of the detachment by the court. The different nations which I shall be obliged to visit during this long voyage, will furnish me amply with materials for a description of the fine river *Mississippi*, and the people on its banks.

In the mean while, I intend to give you a description of *Louisiana* in general; but I believe  
I do

---

\* L'ordonnateur.

I do not need to be very prolix on this subject, as you probably know most of the plans and accounts that have been published of it. Let me only observe to you, that *New Orleans*, the streets of which run all in streight lines, is now much greater and more populous than formerly. There are inhabitants of four sorts, *viz.* Europeans, Americans, Africans or negroes, and *Mestizos* \*. The latter are those born of Europeans and the natives of this country, whom we call savages. The *Creoles* are those that are born here of a French man and French woman, or of European parents.

The *Creoles* in general are very brave, tall, and well made; they are well disposed for cultivating the arts and sciences; but as they cannot make great progress therein for want of good masters, the rich and well-meaning fathers send their children to *France*, as to the best school in the world, for all sorts of acquirements.

As to the fair sex, whose only art is that of pleasing, they are already born with that advantage here, and have no need to acquire it in Europe.

---

\* *Métis*.



*New Orleans* and *Mobile* are the only towns where they speak the French pretty pure. The negroes are brought thither from Africa, and are employed in cultivating the grounds, which are excellently adapted to the culture of indigo, tobacco, rice, maize, or Indian corn, and sugar-canes, of which they have already made plantations that have succeeded very well. Thus the merchants, tradesmen, and strangers, who live here, enjoy as it were an enchanted abode, rendered delicious by the purity of its air, the fertility of its soil, and the beauty of its situation. *New Orleans* lies on the banks of the *Mississippi*, which is one of the greatest rivers in the world; because, for 800 leagues together, it passes through known countries. Its pure and delicious water\* runs for the space of forty leagues between a number of habitations, which form an elegant sight on both its shores; where the pleasures of hunting and fishing, and all other enjoyments of life, are abundant.

The capuchins are the first monks that went over to *New Orleans* as missionaries in 1723. Their superior was the vicar of the parish; these  
good

---

\* *M. le Normant de Méfi*, being *Intendant* of the marine at *Rochefort*, always drank this water at his table. It has the quality of contributing to the fecundity of women.

good friars only employ themselves in affairs relative to their station in life.

Two years after, the Jesuits settled in *Louisiana*. These cunning politicians have found means to get the richest settlement in the whole colony, which they have obtained through their intrigues.

The Ursuline nuns were sent thither almost at the same time. The occupation of these pious girls, whose zeal is truly laudable, is the education of young ladies; they likewise receive orphans into their community, for which the King pays them fifty *écus* a-head pension. These nuns are likewise charged with the care of the military hospital.

My stay here has as yet been so short, that I have not been able to give you any account of the nations which inhabit the banks of the river; however, I will endeavour to give you an idea of the character and turn of the *Chitimachas*, who are settled on a river or branch which bears their name, to the westward of *New Orleans*: I believe the anecdote will prove interesting to you, though this nation is very near extinct.

In

In 1720, one of their nation, having hid himself in a lonely place on the banks of the *Mississippi*, had murdered the *Abbé de St. Côme*, who was then the missionary of the colony. *M. de Bienville*, who was then governor, made the whole nation answerable for it; and, to spare his own people, he employed several nations of his allies to attack them.

These Indians were worsted; the loss of their best warriors forced them to ask for peace: the governor having granted it them, on condition that they would bring the head of the murderer, they punctually executed that condition; and afterwards presented the *calumet* or pipe of peace\* to *M. de Bienville*.

The following is a relation of what I have heard concerning the ceremonies of this solemn embassy.

They arrived at *New Orleans*, singing the song of the *calumet*, which they displayed to the wind,

---

\* The *calumet* is a long pipe, with a head of red, black, or white marble, and a pipe of a reed two and a half or three feet long. The Indians send it by deputies to those nations with whom they will renew or treat of peace. It is adorned with the feathers of the white eagle; it is a symbol of peace and plenty amongst them; and one may go every where without fear, with the *calumet* in hand, because nothing is held more sacred.

wind, and in a certain cadence, to announce their embassy; and they were dressed out with their best ornaments, as is always usual amongst them on such occasions. The chief of the deputation said to the governor: *How happy am I to find myself in thy presence; thou hast long been angry with our nation; we have been informed of what thy heart has told thee, and we have heard with great joy, that it was willing to give us five days.* They then sat down on the ground, leaning their faces on their hands, the speaker without doubt to recover his breath, and the others to keep silent. During this interval every body was ordered not to talk, nor to laugh whilst the harangue lasted, because they would be affronted at it.

The speaker, some moments after, arose with two others; one of them filled the pipe of the calumet with tobacco, the other brought fire; the first then lighted the pipe; the speaker smoked a while, and then presented the pipe to M. *de Bienville*, that he might do the same; accordingly the governor, and all the officers that composed his retinue, smoked out of this calumet, each according to his rank: as soon as this ceremony was over, the old orator took back the calumet, and put it in M. *de Bienville's* hands, in order to be preserved by him. The  
speaker

speaker remained standing, and the other ambassadors sat down near the present which they had brought, and which consisted of roe-buck and doe skins, and in some other furs, all dressed white, as a sign of peace.

The speaker or chancellor was dressed in a robe of several marten-skins sewed together; it was fastened to his right shoulder, and passed under his left arm; he wrapped himself up in this robe, and began his speech with a majestic air, addressing himself to the governor: " My heart laughs for joy on seeing myself before thee; we have all of us heard the word of peace which thou hast sent us: the hearts of our whole nation laugh for joy on that occasion; the women, forgetting that instant all that passed, have danced; and the children have leapt like young roe-bucks. Thy words shall never be forgotten, and our descendants will remember it as long as the ANCIENT WORD\* shall last: as the war has made us poor, we have been obliged to make a general hunt or chace, in order to bring thee some furs: but we were afraid of going to any great distance, lest the other nations should not yet have heard thy word; nor are we come hither but trembling all the way, till we saw thy face. How

---

\* Thus they call *traditions*.

“ How glad are my eyes and my heart to be-  
 “ hold thee this day. Our presents are small,  
 “ but our hearts are great to obey thy words; at  
 “ thy commands thou shalt see our legs run and  
 “ leap like those of the stags, to do as thou shalt  
 “ please.”

Here the orator paused, a little; then raising his voice, he gravely continued his discourse.

“ How beautiful is the sun to-day, in com-  
 “ parison with what it was when thou wert an-  
 “ gry with us! How dangerous is one villain!  
 “ Thou knowest that a single man has killed  
 “ the *chief of the prayer* \*, whose death has caused  
 “ that of our best warriors; we have only old  
 “ men, and women with their children remain-  
 “ ing, who all stretch out their arms towards  
 “ thee as to a good father. The gall that for-  
 “ merly filled thy heart, has given way to ho-  
 “ ney; the great spirit is no longer irritated  
 “ against our nation; thou hast required the  
 “ head of a villain from our hands, and in order  
 “ to obtain peace we have sent it thee.

“ The sun was red before, all the roads were  
 “ full of thorns and briars; the clouds were  
 “ black, the water troubled and stained with  
 “ our

---

\* So they call our missionaries.

" our blood ; our women lamented without inter-  
 " mission the loss of their relations, and durst not  
 " venture to go and fetch wood for preparing  
 " our victuals ; at the least shriek of the birds  
 " of night all our warriors were on foot ; they  
 " never slept without their arms ; our huts were  
 " abandoned, and our fields lay fallow ; we had  
 " all of us empty stomachs, and our faces look-  
 " ed long and meagre ; the game and wild-fowl  
 " fled far from us ; the serpents angrily hissed  
 " at us ; and the birds that perched near our  
 " habitations seemed, by their doleful notes, to  
 " sing us songs of death.

" To-day the sun is bright, the sky is serene,  
 " the clouds are vanished, the roads covered  
 " with flowers ; our gardens and fields shall  
 " henceforth be cultivated, and we will offer  
 " their first-fruits to the great spirit ; the water  
 " is so clear that we see ourselves in it ; the ser-  
 " pents fly from us ; the birds amuse us by the  
 " sweetness and harmony of their songs ; our  
 " wives and children dance, and forget to eat and  
 " to drink ; the whole nation laughs for joy, to  
 " see us walk on the same road with thyself and  
 " the French ; the same sun shall light us, we  
 " shall have but one and the same speech, and  
 " our hearts shall make but one ; we will kill  
 " them that shall kill the French ; our warriors  
 " shall

“ shall hunt to make them subsist, and we will  
 “ eat together : Will not that be good? what  
 “ dost thou say to it, father?”

To this discourse, which was spoken with a firm tone of voice, with grace and decency, and even, if I may be allowed the expression, with the most majestic deportment, *M. de Bien-ville* answered in a few words, in the common language, which he spoke pretty fluently; that he was very glad that their nation had recovered their senses; he gave them something to eat; and, as a mark of friendship, he put his hand into that of the speaker, and so sent them home satisfied.— Since that time they have always been inviolably attached to the French, and furnish *New Orleans* with game.

My third letter will prove more interesting; however, I hope I have hitherto fulfilled my promises; and am,

S I R, &c;

*New Orleans, the 1st  
 of July 1751.*

L E T.





## L E T T E R III.

*To the same.*

*Description of the religious Customs and Ceremonies of some Nations which inhabit the Banks of the great River Mississippi. Conspiracy of the Natches against the French.*

S I R,

I AM now arrived at the place where the great nation of the *Natches* formerly lived, of which the public news have said so much. It is asserted, that this formidable nation gave laws to others, on account of the great extent of their country. They inhabited all the space of land between the river *Menchak*, which is about fifty leagues from the sea, and the river *Hoyo*, which is near 460 leagues from the sea.

On

On the 20th of August we set out from *New Orleans* on our voyage to the *Illinois*, in six boats, on board of which were the four companies about which I wrote to you in my preceding letter, commanded by *M. de Macarty*. We are obliged to row up against the current of the river *Mississippi*, on account of the many windings of that river, which runs between two great forests, the trees of which appear to be as ancient as the world.

The first places you come to on your voyage are two villages peopled with Germans, being the rest of a grant made, in 1720, by the King to Mr. *Law*. This colony was to consist of Germans and Provençals, to the amount of 1500 persons; the ground for it was laid out near a wild nation called the *Akanças*; it was four leagues square, and the colony was erected into a dutchy. They had already transported thither the ammunition and stores for a company of dragoons, and merchandises for the value of upwards a million of *livres*; but Mr. *Law* failed, and the India company, which was at that time established in Louisiana, took possession of all the goods.

The colonists separated, and the Germans settled ten leagues above *New Orleans*: they are

VOL. I.

D

very

very laborious, and are looked upon as the providers and victuallers of the town. The two villages are under [the direction of a Swedish captain\*.

Two leagues further you find a nation called *Colla-pissas*, who are distinguished by their attachment to the French; they are now reduced to a very small number; their true name is *Aque-lon Pissas*, that is, the nation who hear and see.

Next you meet with the *Oumas*, who adore the sun. This nation, with most of the others in America, believes, that the Supreme Being resides in the sun, and that he desires to be revered in that vivifying orb, as the author of nature: they say, there is nothing here that can be compared to him, and that this wonder by enlightening the earth, spreads joy and abundance on it. Upon these principles they worship him, as the visible image of the greatness and goodness of a deity, that condescends to make himself known among men, by distributing his benefactions amongst them.

Fifteen

---

\* It is Mr. *Arnsbourg*, who was at the battle of Pultava in 1709, with Charles XII. This old officer is the head of a numerous family established in Louisiana.

Fifteen leagues above the *Ouidas*; in going up the river, you arrive at the *Cat point*. This place is about forty leagues distant from *New Orleans*. The soil of it is very fertile, and covered with fruit-trees. There are a number of Frenchmen in this part of the country; who apply themselves to the culture of tobacco, cotton, rice, maize, and other corn; the colonists likewise trade in building-timber, which they carry down the river to *New Orleans* upon rafts.

Upon the left shore of the river, a little above the *Cat-point*, you see the village of the *Tonikas*; an Indian nation who have ever been attached to the French. Their chiefs have always exerted themselves to be our allies in war; the last of them, who was very brave, received a dangerous wound in an expedition against the *Natchez*; the King, on receiving an account of this affair, honoured him with a commission, as brigadier of the armies of red men; and further presented him with a blue ribbon, from which hung a silver medal, with a representation of *Paris*: he likewise received a gold-headed cane.

After the massacre of the French by the *Natchez*, whereof I intend to give you an account in its place, a part of that nation pretended to be desirous of making peace with the

grand chief of the *Tonikas*: the latter communicated this to the commander-general of the French, to whom he was very much attached; the *Natches* prevented the answer, and assassinated the *Tonikas*, beginning with their grand chief; his enemies, who feared our advice and our forces, made haste to ruin and destroy a great number of his subjects. We shall always lament, together with these good Indians, the loss of a man, whose great qualities would do honour to a civilized nation.

After eighty leagues navigation from the capital of *Louisiana*, we arrived at the post of the *Natches*, which, about twenty years ago, was very considerable, but is very insignificant at present.

The fort is situated on an eminence, which commands the river *Mississippi*, from which it is about the distance of a cannon-shot. The ground, which in this country is always rising higher, would be one of the most fertile, if it were cultivated; tobacco, cotton, and maize succeed very well in it.

I have made some stay at this post, which is commanded by the Chevalier *d'Orgon*, a natural son

son of the Prince *de Lambesc*, of the house of Lorrain.

The *Natches* who lived here formerly were a very considerable nation. They formed several villages, that were under some peculiar chiefs; and these last again, obeyed one grand chief of the whole nation. All these princes bore the name of *Suns*; there were five hundred of them, all relations of the great Sun, their common sovereign, who carried on his breast the image of the sun, from which he pretended to trace his origin, and which was adored under the name of *Wachtli*, which signifies *the great fire* or the *supreme fire*.

The manner in which the *Natches* rendered divine service to the sun, has something solemn in it. The high-priest got up before sun-rising, and marched at the head of the people with a grave pace, and the calumet of peace in hand; he smoked in honour of the sun, and blew the first mouthful of smoke towards him. On the appearance of that luminous body, all the bystanders began to howl by turns after the high-priest, and contemplated it with their arms extended to heaven. Then they threw themselves on the ground; and their women brought their

D 3

children,

children, and taught them to keep in a devout attitude.

About their harvest-time, which happened in July, the *Natches* celebrated a great feast. They began with blacking their faces; and did not eat till three hours after noon, having previously purified themselves in the baths; the oldest man in the nation then offered to their deity the first fruits of their crops.

They had a temple in which they kept up an eternal fire; the priests took great care to preserve it, and for this purpose they were only allowed to make use of the wood of one kind of tree; if unhappily the fire was extinguished, all the people were in the greatest consternation, and the neglectful priests were punished with death: but such an event happened very seldom; for the keepers of this celestial fire could easily renew it, by fetching common fire under pretext of lighting their calumets; for they were not allowed to employ the holy fire for that use.

When their sovereign died, he was accompanied in the grave by his wives, and by several of his subjects. The lesser Suns took care to follow the same custom; the law likewise condemned

damned every *Natchez* to death, who had married a girl of the blood of the Suns, as soon as she was expired. On this occasion, I must tell you the history of an Indian, who was no ways willing to submit to this law: his name was *Et-tea-teal*; he contracted an alliance with the *Suns*; but the consequences which this honour brought along with it, had like to have proved very unfortunate to him. His wife fell sick; as soon as he saw her at the point of death, he fled, embarked on a piragua on the *Mississippi*, and came to *New Orleans*. He put himself under the protection of *M. de Bievville*, the then governor, and offered to be his huntsman. The Governor accepted his services, and interested himself for him with the *Natches*, who declared that he had nothing more to fear, because the ceremony was past, and he was accordingly no longer a lawful prize.

*Et-tea-teal*, being thus assured, ventured to return to his nation; and, without settling among them, he made several voyages thither: he happened to be there when the Sun, called the *Stung Serpent*, brother to the great Sun, died; he was a relation of the late wife of *Et-tea-teal*, and they resolved to make him pay his debt. *M. de Bienville* had been recalled to France, and the sovereign of the *Natches*

D 4

thought



thought, that the protector's absence had annulled the reprieve granted to the protected person; and accordingly he caused him to be arrested. As soon as the poor fellow found himself in the hut of the grand chief of war, together with the other victims destined to be sacrificed to the *Stung Serpent*, he gave vent to the excess of his grief. The favourite wife of the late Sun, who was likewise to be sacrificed, and who saw the preparations for her death with firmness, and seemed impatient to rejoin her husband, hearing *Etteasteal's* complaints and groans, said to him, Art thou no warrior? He answered, Yes, I am one. However, said she, thou cryest, life is dear to thee; and as that is the case, it is not good that thou shouldst go along with us, go with the women. *Etteasteal* replied, True, life is dear to me; it would be well if I walked yet on earth till to the death of the great Sun, and I would die with him. Go thy way, said the favourite, it is not fit thou shouldst go with us, and that thy heart should remain behind on earth; once more get away, and let me see thee no more.

*Etteasteal* did not stay to have this order repeated to him; he disappeared like lightning: three old women, two of which were his relations, offered to pay his debt; their age and their

their infirmities had disgusted them of life; none of them had been able to use their legs for a great while. The hair of the two that were related to *Etteasteal*, were no more gray than those of women of fifty-five years in France. The other old woman was a hundred and twenty years old, and had very white hair, which is a very uncommon thing among the Indians: none of the three had a quite wrinkled skin. They were dispatched in the evening, one at the door of the *Stung Serpent*, and the other two upon the place before the temple\*.

The generosity of these women gave *Etteasteal* life again, acquired him the degree of *considered*, and cleared his honour, which he had sullied by fearing death. He remained quiet after that time; and, taking advantage of what he had learnt during his stay among the French, he became a juggler, and made use of his knowledge to impose upon his countrymen †.

The

---

\* A cord is fastened round their necks with a slip knot, and eight men of their relations strangle them, by drawing four one way and four the other; so many are not necessary, but as they acquire nobility by such executions, there are always more than are wanting, and the operation is performed in an instant.

† The jugglers in this country perform the functions of priests, physicians, and fortune-tellers, and chiefly pretend to pass for forcerers.

The morning after this execution, they made every thing ready for the conveyance, and the hour being come, the great master of the ceremonies appeared at the door of the burgh, adorned suitably to his quality; the victims who were to accompany the deceased prince, into the mansion of the spirits, came forth; they consisted of the favourite wife of the deceased, of his second wife, his chancellor, his physician, his hired man, that is his first servant, and of some old women.

The favourite went to the great Sun, with whom there were several Frenchmen, to take leave of him: she gave orders for the Suns of both sexes that were her children to appear, and spoke to the following effect:

“Children, this is the day on which I am to  
 “tear myself from your arms, and to follow  
 “your father’s steps, who waits for me in the  
 “country of the spirits; if I were to yield to  
 “your tears, I would injure my love, and fail  
 “in my duty. I have done enough for you, by  
 “bearing you next to my heart, and by suck-  
 “ling you with my breasts. You that are de-  
 “scended of his blood, and fed by my milk,  
 “ought you to shed tears? Rejoice rather that  
 “you are *Suns* and warriors; you are bound to  
 “give examples of firmness and valour to the  
 “whole

"whole nation; go, my children, I have pro-  
 "vided for all your wants, by procuring your  
 "friends, my friends, and those of your father,  
 "are yours [too]; I leave you amidst them;  
 "they are the French, - they are tender-hearted  
 "and generous, make yourselves worthy of  
 "their esteem, by not degenerating from your  
 "race; always act openly with them, and never  
 "implore them with meanness.

"And you Frenchmen," added she, turning  
 herself towards our officers, "I recommend my  
 "orphan children to you; they will know no  
 "other fathers than you; you ought to protect  
 "them."

After that she got up; and, followed by her  
 troop, returned to her husband's hut, with a  
 surprising firmness,

A noble woman came to join herself to the  
 number of victims of her own accord, being en-  
 gaged, by the friendship she bore the *Stung Ser-  
 pent*, to follow him into the other world. The  
 Europeans called her the *haughty* lady, on ac-  
 count of her majestic deportment, and her  
 proud air, and because she only frequented the  
 company of the most distinguished Frenchmen;  
 they regretted her much, because she had the know-

knowledge of several simples, with which she had saved the lives of many of our sick. This moving sight filled our people with grief and horror. The favourite wife of the deceased rose up, and spoke to them with a smiling countenance: "I die without fear," said she, "grief does not embitter my last hours, I recommend my children to you; whenever you see them, noble Frenchmen, remember that you have loved their father, and that he was till death a true and sincere friend of your nation, whom he loved more than himself. The disposer of life has been pleased to call him, and I shall soon go and join him; I shall tell him that I have seen your hearts moved at the sight of his corps: do not be grieved; we shall be longer friends in the *country of the spirits* than here, because we do not die there again\*."

These words forced tears from the eyes of all the French; they were obliged to do all they could to prevent the *great Sun* from killing himself; for he was inconsolable at the death of his brother;

---

\* At the hour intended for the ceremony, they made the victims swallow little balls or pills of tobacco, in order to make them giddy, and as it were to take the sensation of pain from them; after that they were all frangled, and put upon mats, the favourite on the right, the other wife on the left, and the others according to their rank.

brother, upon whom he was used to lay the weight of government, he being great chief of war of the Natches. *i. e.* Generalissimo of their armies; that prince grew furious by the resistance he met with; he held his gun by the barrel, and the *Sun*, his presumptive heir, held it by the lock, and caused the powder to fall out of the pan; the hut was full of *Suns*, *Nobles*, and *Honourables* \*, who were all trembling: but the French raised their spirits again, by hiding all the arms belonging to the sovereign, and filling the barrel of his gun with water, that it might be unfit for use for some time.

As soon as the *Suns* saw their sovereign's life in safety, they thanked the French, by squeezing their hands, but without speaking; a most profound silence reigned throughout, for grief and awe kept in bounds the multitude that were present.

The wife of the great *Sun* was seized with fear during this transaction. She was asked  
whether

---

\* The established distinctions among these Indians were as follows: The *Suns*, relations of the great *Sun*, held the highest rank; next came the *Nobles*; after them the *Honourables*; and last of all, the common people, who were very much despised. As the nobility was propagated by the women, this contributed much to multiply it.

whether she was ill; and she answered aloud, "Yes I am;" and added, with a lower voice, "if the Frenchmen go out of this hut, my husband dies; and all the Natches will die with him; stay then, brave Frenchmen, because if your words are as powerful as arrows; besides, who could have ventured to do what you have done? But you are his true friends and those of his brother." Their laws obliged the *great Sun's* wife to follow her husband in the grave: this was doubtless the cause of her fears; and likewise the gratitude towards the French, who interested themselves in behalf of his life, prompted her to speak in the above-mentioned manner.

The *great Sun* gave his hand to the officers, and said to them: "My friends, my heart is so overpowered with grief, that, though my eyes were open, I have not taken notice that you have been standing all this while, nor have I asked you to sit down; but pardon the excess of my affliction."

The Frenchmen told him, that he had no need of excuses; that they were going to leave him alone, but that they would cease to be his friends unless he gave orders to light the fires again

again \*, lighting his own before them, and that they should not leave him till his brother was buried.

He took all the Frenchmen by the hands, and said, "Since all the chiefs and noble officers will have me stay on earth, I will do it, I will not kill myself; let the fires be lighted again immediately, and I'll wait till death joins me to my brother; I am already old, and till I die I shall walk with the French; had it not been for them, I should have gone with my brother, and all the roads would have been covered with dead bodies."

This prince only survived the *Stung Serpent* one year, and his nephew succeeded him. The reign of that young prince proved very unfortunate to the colony. You shall see, Sir, by the sequel of this letter, that the colony owes its safety only to the mother of this sovereign; she got from him the secret of the general conspiracy against our nation, whom she loved very much.

I must do justice to the Indians; the project which they formed of destroying all the French here,

---

\* The great Sun had given orders to put out all the fires, which is only done at the death of the sovereigns.



here, was not the result of natural inconstancy or fickle temper; it was the bad conduct of an officer, who insulted a people whom he ought to have treated gently, that roused their anger. Free born men, living peaceably in the country where their ancestors settled, could not bear the tyranny which the strangers exercised over them, who were come to settle amongst them. The *Sieur de Chepar*, commandant of the post of the *Natches*, neglected to gain the esteem of the French and the Indians under his care; he abused those who would not enter into his criminal conduct, and trusted the most important posts to serjeants and corporals who were entirely devoted to him. You can easily conceive, Sir, that the military discipline was entirely subverted by preferences of this kind, which are so contrary to subordination.

*M. Dumont*, the second officer, made *remonstrances*, which were not attended to, and to which he gave no other answer than by putting him in irons. As soon as he was set at liberty, he went down to the capital to lay his complaints before *M. Perrier*, then governor of *Louisiana*. *M. de Chepar* was recalled to give account of his conduct; he was to be broken, but his intrigues and his patrons served him, he was acquitted and sent back to his post.

Instead.

Instead of being corrected by this mortification, he conducted himself as before, and became the object of detestation and abhorrence of both the French and Indians; he irritated the latter, and forced them to come to the most violent extremities. *M. de Chepar*, desirous of making his fortune in a short time, summoned the *Sun* of a village called the *Apple*, to retire with his people, and to leave him the ground which he occupied, because he wanted to make himself a habitation on it, which should turn out to good account. The *Cacique* represented to him, that the bones of his ancestors were reposed there: his remonstrances proved uselefs; the French commandant ordered the *Great Sun* to cause the village to be evacuated, and even threatened to send him loaded with irons to *New Orleans* in case of non-compliance. Perhaps this officer thought, he could treat the chief as a slave; he did not reflect, that he spoke to a man accustomed to command, and whose authority was despotic over his subjects.

The *Great Sun* heard him, and retired without shewing any passion; he assembled his council, where it was resolved, that *M. de Chepar* should be told, that before they could evacuate the *Apple* village, they must make the plan of another, and that this required two *moons* time.

This resolution was notified to the governor, who sent back the messengers, and threatened them with the severest punishments, if the village of the Apple was not put in his hands within a very short term. This answer was brought to the council, where the old men were of opinion that they ought to gain time, during which they should consult upon the means of getting rid of these troublesome strangers, who were going to become tyrants. As they knew *M. de Chepar* to be very selfish, they agreed to propose it to him, to grant them a delay of several months, during which each hut was to give him a tribute in Indian corn or maize, in game, and in furs. The avarice of the governor made him fall into the snare; he accepted the proposition, but pretended however that he only did it in order to oblige the nation, whom he loved on account of their constant friendship with the French. The *Great Sun* was not imposed upon by this artful disinterestedness; he ordered his council to meet again, and informed them, that the term they had desired had been granted, and that it was necessary they should make good use of it, consider of the means of getting rid of a heavy tribute, and above all of the tyrannical domination of the French. He observed, that such an enterprize required an inviolable secret, solid measures, and, above all, a great deal of cunning;

cunning; he recommended it to them, that they should in the mean while increase the proofs of confidence and friendship to the French; reflect upon what was to be done, and return to the council as soon as they had hit upon some project which might be attended with certain success.

During five or six days the nobles and old men consulted with each other, and met again unanimously resolved to destroy all the French. The oldest man in the council, having saluted his chief, spoke to the following effect:

“ We have long experienced, that the neigh-  
 “ bourhood of the French does us more harm  
 “ than good; we, old men perceive it, but our  
 “ youths do not see it; the European goods  
 “ please the young people, but of what service  
 “ are they? They seduce our wives, corrupt  
 “ the manners of the nation, debauch our girls,  
 “ and make them proud and idle. The young  
 “ men are in the same case; the husbands must  
 “ over-work themselves, merely to satisfy the  
 “ luxury of their wives. Before the French  
 “ came into these countries, we were men, we  
 “ were contented with what we had; we walk-  
 “ ed boldly on all the roads, because we were  
 “ our own masters; but now we only go by

E 2

“ groping,

“groping, for fear of finding thorns in our way; we go like slaves, and such we shall soon be, since they use us as such already. As soon as they shall have power enough, they will no longer keep in bounds, they will load us with irons; has not their chief threatened to offer that indignity to ours; and is not death preferable to slavery \*?”

Here the orator paused; and, after taking breath, continued as follows:

“What shall we wait for? Shall we suffer the French to multiply till we can no longer resist them? What will the other nations say of us? We pass for the most sensible among the *red* men †, and they will have reason to say that we have less sense than other people. Why shall we wait longer? Let us set ourselves at liberty, and let us shew that we are true men. We must begin this day to prepare for it; we must order our wives to get victuals in readiness, without telling them the  
“reason.

---

\* Nature alone has taught these savages to respect their sovereign, and to cherish liberty.

† Thus the Indians call themselves, to distinguish themselves from the Europeans who are white, and from the Africans who are black.

“ reason. Let us bring the *calumet* of peace to  
 “ all the nations of this country, and tell them  
 “ that the French strive to subdue this whole  
 “ continent; and that, as they are stronger in  
 “ our neighbourhood than any where else, we  
 “ shall be the first whom they will load with  
 “ their yoke. As soon as they shall have suffi-  
 “ cient forces, they will load all the other na-  
 “ tions with it; let us convince them how much  
 “ it is their interest to prevent this misfortune,  
 “ which cannot be avoided but by exterminating  
 “ them; let all the nations join us in this un-  
 “ dertaking; let us destroy the French every  
 “ where on the same day, and at the same hour;  
 “ let the time of the massacre be that of the ex-  
 “ piration of the term their chief has granted  
 “ us: thus we can free ourselves from the tri-  
 “ bute which we have laid on ourselves; and  
 “ thus the victuals which we brought them, will  
 “ come into our possession again: On that great  
 “ day of liberty our warriors shall have their  
 “ fire-arms with them; the *Natches* shall spread  
 “ among the French, there shall be three or  
 “ four of us in each house to one Frenchman;  
 “ they shall borrow fire-arms and ammunition  
 “ of them, under pretence of a general chace  
 “ on account of some great feast, and they shall  
 “ promise to bring back some game. Some  
 “ guns fired near the house of the governor of

“ the fort, shall be the signal for them to fall  
 “ upon the French. In order to make all the  
 “ advantage we can of this blow, the other na-  
 “ tions must second us; they must make the  
 “ same massacre of the Frenchmen at their se-  
 “ veral stations; to be sure of that, we must  
 “ make some bundles of rods, containing an  
 “ equal number, give each of them a bundle,  
 “ and keep one; let them take notice of the  
 “ number of days they are to wait; every morn-  
 “ ing one rod must be cut in pieces and thrown  
 “ into the fire, and when there will be but one  
 “ left, the time of the slaughter is come; it  
 “ must begin at the first quarter of the day (*i. e.*  
 “ at nine o’clock in the morning); we shall fall  
 “ upon our tyrants all at once; they shall be  
 “ overwhelmed on all sides; and when they are  
 “ once destroyed, it will be an easy matter to  
 “ prevent those from settling among us that  
 “ come from the old continent, across the great  
 “ lake. It must be recommended before all  
 “ things, to be exact in drawing a rod from the  
 “ bundle every day; the least mistake can have  
 “ dangerous consequences; we shall charge  
 “ some wise man with it, and we must beg our  
 “ neighbours to imitate us.”

Here the orator gave over, and the old men  
 approved of his proposal; the *Sun* of the *Apple*  
 village

village applauded above all ; he was the most hurt by the injustice of *M. de Chepar* ; his private revenge would accordingly be the most satisfied, he feared to see it fail, and therefore represented to the council the consequences of indiscretion, and even engaged them to keep the secret of this conspiracy from the *female Suns* \*. It now remained to make the grand chief of the *Natches* enter into their scheme ; notwithstanding the great desire he had to be rid of the French, the project seemed too violent to him ; the Sun of the Apple took upon himself to determine him to it ; he was reckoned a man of sense and penetration, and on that account was in great repute with the nation : he succeeded ; he remarked to the great Sun the necessity of this measure, by telling him what he had to fear for himself ; the French governor of the fort had threatened him, that he would soon drive him from his village ; the great Sun was young, and consequently a weak man, he that spoke to him was a cunning one, the design was approved of : the next morning, when the Suns came to salute their sovereign, they received orders to go

E 4

to

---

\* The Indians have two words to denote male and female Suns, (after the manner of the English words *prince*, *princess*) which the French author has happily expressed by *Soleil* and *Soleille*.



to the village of the Apple, under some pretence or other, without raising any suspicion that they went thither in pursuance of some order; this was executed as required. The seducing genius of the Sun of the Apple attracted them all, and they all promised to enter into the conspiracy. A council of Suns and old men was immediately formed; the project was proposed there again, and carried unanimously; the old men were appointed ambassadors to the other nations; they had warriors to accompany them, and it was forbidden under pain of death to speak of this to any person. They set out immediately all at once, and unknown to the French.

Notwithstanding the profound secret that was kept among the Natches, the common people was uneasy at the councils of Suns and noble old men that had been held; it is not uncommon in every country in the world, to see subjects endeavour to penetrate the secrets of the court. However, the curiosity of the people could not be satisfied; none but the female Suns (or princesses) had a right in this nation to enquire why they kept their proceedings secret from them. The young wife of the great Sun was but eighteen years old, and cared very little about it; only the female Sun called the *Stung Arm*, mother of

of the fovereign, and a woman of good fenfe (which ſhe was not ignorant of) could take it ill, that they kept the ſecret from her. She ſhewed her diſcontentment to her ſon, who answered, that the embaffies were ſent out for the fake of renewing alliances with other nations, with whom they had long been at peace, and who might think themſelves deſpised if they were longer neglected. This diſſimulated answer ſeemed to appeaſe the Sun *Stung Arm*, but it did not take off her uneaſineſs; on the contrary it redoubled, when ſhe ſaw, upon the return of the ambaffadors, that the Suns aſſembled in ſecret with thoſe deputies, to hear how they had been received, whereas ſuch councils were generally held in public.

The princeſs was vexed at this: What, ſaid ſhe to herſelf, they hide from me what the whole nation ought to know: if her prudence had not checked her anger, ſhe would have given vent to it then. It was happy for the French that ſhe thought herſelf thus deſpised; ſhe juſtly feared to augment the impoſſibility of coming at the ſecret, if ſhe laid open her diſpleaſure. Her genius ſuggeſted her the means of ſatisfying her curioſity; ſhe prevailed upon the great Sun, her ſon, to go with her to ſee a relation who lived in the village of the Apple, and who ſhe had  
heard

heard was very ill. Under pretence of leading him the finest road, she took him on the longest, which was indeed the least frequented. She had a good deal of penetration; she imagined, that the motive of this secret arose from their carrying on something to the disadvantage of the French; what confirmed her conjectures, were the preparations which the Sun of the Apple was making. Finding herself in a solitary place with her son, she spoke to him in the following words:

“ Let us sit down here, for I am tired, and  
 “ I have likewise something to say to thee;” as  
 soon as they were seated, she added, “ Open  
 “ thy ears to hear me; I never taught thee to  
 “ lie, and I always told thee, that a liar did not  
 “ deserve to be ranked among men, and that a  
 “ lying *Sun* deserved to meet with the greatest  
 “ contempt, and even from women; therefore  
 “ I believe thou wilt tell me truth. Tell me  
 “ then, are not all the Suns brothers? How-  
 “ ever, they all keep off from me, as if my lips  
 “ were cut off, and I could not retain my words;  
 “ or dost thou think that I ever spoke in my  
 “ sleep. I am in despair to see myself slighted  
 “ by my brothers, but above all by thee.  
 “ What, art thou not my own offspring? Hast  
 “ thou not suckled at my breast? And have I  
 “ not

“ not fed thee with my purest blood ? Does not  
 “ the same blood run in our veins ? Couldst  
 “ thou be a Sun if thou wert not my son ? Hast  
 “ thou forgotten, that, without my care, thou  
 “ wouldst have been dead long ago ? Every  
 “ body, and I myself have told thee, that thou  
 “ art the son of a Frenchman \* ; but my own  
 “ blood is dearer to me than that of strangers.  
 “ I now walk by thy side like a bitch, without  
 “ being looked upon ; I wonder that thou dost  
 “ not kick me away with thy foot : I am not sur-  
 “ prised that the others hide themselves from  
 “ me ; but thou, who art my son, canst thou  
 “ do it ? Hast thou ever seen a son mistrust his  
 “ mother in our nation ? Thou art the only  
 “ one of that temper. There is such an uproar  
 “ in the nation, and I am ignorant of the cause  
 “ of it, I who am the old Sun ; art thou  
 “ afraid that I should rebuke thee, or make thee  
 “ the slave of the French, against whom you  
 “ act ? O ! I am tired of this contempt, and  
 “ of walking with such ungrateful people.”

The

---

\* This princess had, for a long time, loved an officer of  
 our nation ; there was no doubt of his being the father of  
 the great Sun, and that took off nothing of the respect that  
 his subjects owed him ; the women gave nobility among  
 them, and they were contented if they were sure of a man's  
 mother, they cared very little to know who was his father,

The son of this Sun was quite struck with her discourse; he was moved by it to tears, and heard these remonstrances with the usual tranquility of an American, and with the respect due to a princess; he afterwards answered her to the following purport. "Thy reproaches are  
 "arrows which pierce my breast, and I do not  
 "think I ever scorned or despised thee; but hast  
 "thou ever heard it said, that the resolves of  
 "the council of the old men may be revealed?  
 "Is it not the duty of all men to keep secrets,  
 "and I who am a sovereign ought not I to set  
 "an example? The great Sun my wife has  
 "not been informed of the secret any more than  
 "thyself. Though it is known that I am a  
 "Frenchman's son, I have not been mistrusted;  
 "they have well imagined, that thy great ge-  
 "nius would find out the secret of the council;  
 "but when it was kept from the great Sun my  
 "wife, was it fit that thou shouldst be informed  
 "of it? But since thou hast guessed it all,  
 "what can I tell thee further? Thou knowest  
 "as much of it as myself, so shut thy mouth."

"I was dubious," said she, "about whom  
 "you were taking so many precautions; but  
 "since it is against the French, I fear you have  
 "not taken your measures well to surprise  
 "them: for I know they have a great deal of  
 "sense,

“ sense, though the governor of this station has  
 “ lost his; they are brave; they have goods  
 “ in sufficient quantity to make all the other na-  
 “ tions act against us. If you had a mind to at-  
 “ tack only the red men, I should sleep with  
 “ more security; I am no more young\* ; an  
 “ old woman’s life is a trifle, but thine is dear  
 “ to me. If your old men have thought it as  
 “ easy a matter to surprize the French as the red  
 “ men, they are grossly mistaken; the French  
 “ have resources which we have not, thou know-  
 “ est they have the *speaking substance* (i. e. pa-  
 “ per).”

Her son told her, that she had nothing to fear  
 with regard to the measures which had been ta-  
 ken. After telling her all that I have just now  
 informed you of, he told her that the bundle of  
 rods was in the temple, upon the flat piece of  
 wood (or the table).

When the princess was sufficiently informed  
 of every particular, she pretended to approve  
 of the proceedings; and, leaving her son entire-  
 ly easy, she only meditated on the means of ren-  
 dering this barbarous design abortive; she had  
 but little time left, for the day fixed for the  
 massacre was near at hand.

This

---

\* Her lover was already dead some time.

This woman could not consent to see all the French destroyed in one day by the conspiracy of the *Natches*; she therefore undertook to bid them keep upon their guard; for that purpose she made use of some Indian girls who had French lovers, but she commanded them expressly not to say that they acted by her orders.

The *Sieur de Macé*, ensign of the garrison of the fort at the *Natches*, received advice by a young Indian girl who loved him; she told him crying, that her nation was to massacre all the French. *M. de Macé*, amazed at this discourse, questioned his mistress: her simple answers and her tender fears left him no room to doubt of the plot: he went immediately to give *M. de Chepar* intelligence of it, who put him under arrest for giving a false alarm; seven of the inhabitants of the fort, instructed by the same means, coming to ask his leave to take up arms, in order to prevent a surprise, were put in irons; the governor treated them as cowards, and was vexed that they endeavoured to inspire him with any mistrust against a nation that shewed so much friendship: the regularity of their payments kept up his security: he did not suspect the politics of the Indians; he blindly despised them, nor did he think men of their kind capable of so much cunning.

The

The Sun *Stung Arm* saw with grief, that her cares for the conservation of the French were useless; she was determined to serve them in spite of themselves; she could not preserve them all, and therefore she endeavoured to lessen the number of victims as much as possible; she secretly went to the temple\*, she drew a couple of rods out of the bundle unnoticed by the priests; her intention was to forward the day fixed for the execution of the conspiracy; she foresaw that the massacre which would happen at the *Natches* would soon be spread far about, that the French who were settled among the other nations would be informed of it, and be upon their guard. That was the only thing that remained for her to do, and she succeeded in it; the *Natches* found they were come to their last rod, without perceiving the imposture; they boldly began the intended slaughter, in the persuasion that their allies would act at the same time.

The 28th of December 1729, at eight in the morning, the Indians spread among the French; some discharges of guns, that were to serve as a signal, were fired near the door of *M. de Chepar's* house;

---

\* Only the Suns among the women could go into the temple.



house; and immediately they fell upon the French every where at the same time.

Mess. *de Rolly*, chief factors of the West India company, were killed first. *M. de la Loire des Ursins* house made some resistance; his servants killed eight *Natches* before they were overpowered. *M. des Ursins* himself, who just was taking a ride, but returned at the first firing of the guns, was stopped by a troop of Indians: he defended himself very bravely, killed four of them, and died pierced with wounds. This is all that the entreprize cost the Indians: they murdered near two thousand persons; only twenty-five or twenty-six negroes escaped, and most of them were wounded. One hundred and fifty children, ninety women, and as many negroes, were taken prisoners, in hopes of selling them to the English in *Carolina*.

During this carnage the great Sun was quietly sitting under one of the India company's ware-houses; they brought him first of all the head of the governor, then those of the chief Frenchmen, which he ordered to be ranged round the first. All the others were put in heaps; the corpses were not buried, and became the prey of vultures; they cut open the bodies of women big with child, and murdered almost

almost all those that had children at the breast, because their cries and tears importuned them; they made all the rest slaves, and treated them with the greatest indignity.

Some people pretend, that *M. de Chepar* had the misfortune to perish last of all, and to be the spectator of this horrible slaughter: he then found, but too late, how wise the advices were that had been given him. The Indians told him, that a *dog* as he was did not deserve to die by the hands of warriors: he was given up to the *stinking fellows*\*, who killed him with arrows, and afterwards cut off his head.

Such was the death of a man who only followed his own head, his cruelty, his avarice, and his ambition. As no Frenchman escaped from this massacre, it cannot be exactly ascertained what kind of death they made the Governor undergo; it is enough to know, that his enemies were a barbarous people, whom he had irritated. A good administration would have attached them to the French, who drew great advantages from them: thus the fault of one man can draw after it the ruin of a whole colony; one cannot be

VOL. I.

F

.suf-

---

\* The common people among the Natches are called *Miché-Michéquiipi*, which signifies *stinking fellow*.

sufficiently cautious in the choice of those who are to be sent as governors into those parts. The Indians, notwithstanding the ideas we have of them, are not always easily managed; politics and wisdom must necessarily be employed, in order to obtain their friendship; they will not be offended with impunity, this history is a proof of it; nothing could be better conducted than the plot of the *Natches*; and how unhappy had it been, without the interposition of Providence! The *Sun Stung Arm* was worthy of the greatest acknowledgements, but it is not well known how they have been made to her.

The nations who entered into the plot with the *Natches*, not knowing the stratagem by which the stroke had been advanced, believed they were betrayed: The *Chactaw* nation imagined, that the *Natches* were unwilling to give them their share of the plunder of the French; and, to convince the latter that they had no part in the conjuration, they joined them in order to chastise the *Natches*. These returned the French women and the negroes whom they had taken; some time after they were attacked in their intrenchments, but escaped by the help of a thunder-storm, and quitted the country. About a thousand of them were taken and brought to *New Orleans*, and afterwards sold to the isle of  
St.

*St. Domingo.* Among these prisoners was the *Great Sun*, his wife, and his mother, who related to the French the above detail of the plot. The *Great Sun* disowned the massacre; he said that his nation had abused his youth, in order to strike this blow; that he had always loved the French; that it was their own chief who had compelled the *Natches* to this desperate action, by his extortions upon a free nation. The French were contented with his disavowal; they treated him and his mother and wife with gentleness; but as they did not return to their nation, they soon died with grief. Since that time this country is not inhabited: the *Natches*, being pursued by the French, and being too weak to resist them, took refuge among the *Chicachas*\*, where they found an asylum.

We still have a fort here, but the colony is far from being brilliant; the means of establishing it would be to attract other Indians to it. This is all, Sir, which I can relate to you concerning this part of the country. I shall now soon leave it, and continue my voyage; and I conclude my letter, by renewing to you the protestations of those sentiments which you know me capable of. And am, S I R, &c.

*At the Natches, Sept.*

10, 1751.

F 2

L E T -

---

† Chickasaws,



## L E T T E R IV.

*To the same.*

*The Author arrives at the Akanzas. Unhappy Death of the People of Ferdinando Soto. Reflections on the Folly of Men who seek for a Mountain of Gold. Origin of the famous Dorado. Short Account of the tragic Death of M. de la Salle,*

S I R,

AFTER sailing about a hundred and  
 A twenty leagues to the north of the  
 Natches, up the *Mississippi*, without  
 meeting with any habitation on the road, we  
 arrived among a nation famous for their friend-  
 ship for the French, and known formerly from  
 the expedition of *Ferdinando Soto*. I spoke to  
 an old Indian chief of this country, who told  
 me, he saw *M. de la Salle* here in 1682, when  
 he discovered the great river *St. Louis*, known  
 under

under the name of *Mississippi*, or, as the Indians pronounce it, *Messhassipi*, which signifies *all the rivers*, or the *great river*.

M. *de la Salle* passed by this nation in coming down the river : he made acquaintance with them, and took possession of their country in the name of *Louis le Grand*, of glorious memory \* ; after fixing the cross and the arms of France there, he followed the course of the *Mississippi*, which enters into the famous gulph of *Mexico*. He took the latitude at its mouth, which he found to be twenty-nine degrees north ; he sailed up again afterwards to the river of *Illinois*, from whence he went to *Canada*, and from thence he returned into *France*.

F 3

On

---

\* If tyranny, oppression, and unbridled ambition are sufficient to immortalize a prince, it is certain *Lewis XIV.* has a just claim to be called *great*. It was his happiness to have great ministers in the first part of his life, in a time when the greater part of Europe had very few manufactures ; but he was weak enough to give ear to the advices suggested to him by the Jesuits, and a superannuated and bigotted mistress : this overturned the system of grandeur for which the ministers had laid a good foundation, and Lewis had the misfortune to see all the rival nations around him grow powerful and rich, by the emigration of his oppressed Protestant subjects, and thus he outlived his own greatness : his death was the most fortunate event for France in her weak and exhausted state. F.

On his arrival at court, he imparted his discovery to Mess. *Colbert* and *de Seignelai*, who obtained for him a commission from the King, importing, that all the countries which he should discover from *New Biscay* to the *Illinois*, and the people, both French and Indians, that should be in those countries, should be under his orders.

It was at the same nation, called *Akanzas*, that Mr. *Foutel* arrived, who set out after the death of M. *de la Salle*, with guides to find out the *Mississippi*. This is the only officer who has left us an account which may be credited: I think I ought to give you an abstract of it; you will find the history of M. *de la Salle* in it, and of the end of his unlucky expedition.

In regard to *Ferdinand Soto's* voyage, I shall but just mention, that the general history of the West Indies informs us, that this great officer, proud and enriched by the conquest of *Peru*, after imbruing his sacrilegious hands in the blood of the unfortunate family of the *Incas*, intended to penetrate into this country with the bravest of his soldiers, to subdue the nations that inhabit the neighbourhood of this river, of which I am going to give you a description; but he did not know the interior parts of this vast continent; perhaps he expected to find effeminate  
nations

tations in it, as in South America; he was mistaken in his hopes, part of his people were killed with clubs by the Indians, who flayed the principal officers of his army, and afterwards exposed their skins on the door of their temple, which so frightened the Spaniards that they embarked immediately for Europe.

The historian says, that *Ferdinand Soto* died of the shame which the bad success of this enterprise had brought on him, in 1543; and, since that time till 1682, this fine country has been inhabited by no Europeans.

The fate of *M. de la Salle* has been no happier than that of *Ferdinand Soto*.

There is no virtue in man which is not blended with some faults; this is generally the fault of human nature; and what increases our humiliation, the greatest virtues are often accompanied by the greatest vices. You will easily perceive this, Sir, by the short extract from *M. Joutel's Journal*.

*M. Robert Carvelier de la Salle* set sail from *Rothelle* the 24th of July 1684, with a squadron of four ships, commanded by *M. de Beaujeu*, a captain of a ship. Two hundred and eighty-



five persons, together with thirty volunteers \* and some gentlemen, and a number of workmen and girls embarked with him. *M. de la Salle* was on board *M. de Beaujeu's* ship, in whom he reposed no manner of confidence. Whatever that officer proposed to him, he always answered with an air of haughtiness, *This is not the King's intention*; he certainly did not take the proper steps to interest a man in his undertaking, whose assistance he wanted to make it succeed. Every one accordingly began to judge disadvantageously of an expedition, the chiefs of which seemed to act by very different principles; and time has unhappily confirmed it.

The 28th of December 1684, the squadron discovered the continent of *Florida*; and *M. de la Salle*, having heard much about the current that set in to the eastward in the Mexican gulph, he made no doubt but that the mouth of the *Mississippi* was far to the west; an error that was the cause of all his misfortunes. Accordingly he bore away westward; but he advanced very little, because he went near the shore from time

to

---

\* Among these were three priests of *St. Sulpitius*, one of them *M. de la Salle's* brother, *Chedeville* his relation, and *Majulte*, besides four recollects, who were to establish the missions among the Indians. There were likewise two of his nephews, *Moranget* and *Cavelier* fourteen years of age.

to time, and failed along the coast, to try whether he could not discover what he sought for.

The 2d of January 1685, the squadron was, according to conjecture, pretty near the mouth of the *Mississippi*; and on the 10th they passed by it, without perceiving it. *M. de la Salle*, being persuaded that the squadron was but just opposite the *Appalachian* mountains, continued his voyage without sending his long-boat on shore.

It is said, that people shewed him the mouth of the river, and that he would not so much as take the trouble of getting a certainty, because he had taken it into his head, that it could not be the place which was pointed out to him. His obstinacy could not be conquered nor justified.

He certainly did not know, or did not think of it, that the greatest men in the world have often been, in part, indebted for their greatest success to people of inferior merit; and that those are the wisest, who profit by the advice and understanding even of those that are less endowed than they themselves.

Some time after, upon some hints which the Indians on the coast gave him, he wanted to return;

turn; but *M. de Beaujeu* refused to do him that favour. They pursued the same course; and the Squadron, in a few days, came to *St. Bernard's bay*, without knowing it. This bay is one hundred leagues to the westward of the mouth of the *Mississippi*; they cast anchor there, and sent the boats upon discovery, in order to try to get knowledge of the place they were in. They found a very fine river, with a bar at the mouth of it, where there is not above ten or twelve feet water. This discovery was made after many times sailing backwards and forwards, and after several meetings of the council, in which nothing was concluded, because whenever one proposed any thing, the other was sure to oppose it.

*M. de la Salle*, who believed he was near the *Mississippi*, and whom *M. de Beaujeu's* presence constrained more than it did him any service, resolved to land all his people in that place. Having taken this resolution, on the 20th of February he sent orders to the commander of the ship *La Flute* to land the heaviest goods, and to go up into the river. He intended to be present at the execution of his orders; but the *Marquis de la Sablonniere*, and five or six Frenchmen, having been taken by the Indians as they walked in the woods, he hastened to free them.

He

He was not yet far from the shore, when, casting his eye towards the bay, he saw the *Flute* manœuvring in such a manner as to beat against the rocks; his bad luck, says *Joutel* in his relation, prevented his returning to avoid that misfortune. He continued his journey towards the Indian village, where his people had been carried to; and when he came there, he heard a cannon fired. He took this as a signal to give him notice, that the *Flute* was lost; and his conjecture proved true.

Those who were witnesses to this accident plainly took it to be the effect of a premeditated design of *M. de St. Aigron*, who commanded that vessel. This loss had many disagreeable consequences, as it contained the ammunition utensils, tools, and in general all that is necessary to a new settlement. *M. de la Salle* hastened to the place where the ship was lost, and found every body in a total inaction. He begged *M. de Beaujeu* to lend him his boat and canoe, which he obtained very easily.

He began with saving the crew; next he got the powder and flour, afterwards the wine and brandy; he brought on shore about thirty barrels: had the boat of the *Flute* been able to  
assist

assist that of the ship *Le Joli*, almost every thing would have been saved; but that was sunk on purpose, and the night being come, they were obliged to defer the unloading till the next morning. Some hours being past, the wind, which came from the sea, grew more violent, and the waves increased; the *Flute* beating against the rocks burst, and a quantity of goods fell out through the opening, and were carried away by the sea. This was only perceived at break of day; thirty more barrels of wine and brandy were saved, together with some barrels full of flower, meat, and pease: all the rest was lost.

To increase the misfortune, they were surrounded on all sides by Indians; who, notwithstanding the care that was taken to prevent their profiting any thing by the general confusion, took away several things which had been preserved from the wreck. The theft was not perceived till they were retired with the booty. They had left several of their canoes on the shore, which were seized upon: very weak reprisals indeed, which cost much more than they were worth. The Indians came at night to take their canoes; they surpris'd those who were left to take care of them, and, finding them asleep, they killed two volunteers, whom M. *de la Salle* regretted

regretted very much, and wounded his nephew and another person.

So many misfortunes, one after another, disgusted several persons who were upon the expedition; and, among others, Mess. *Doinnaville* and *Mignet*, two engineers, who were willing to return to France, to which the discourses of *M. de la Salle's* enemies contributed greatly; for they never ceased to cry down his conduct, and tax his project as a filly and rash undertaking. He, on the contrary, never shewed more resolution and firmness; he constructed a warehouse surrounded with good intrenchments; and taking it into his head, that the river, in which he was, might possibly be one of the branches of the *Mississippi*, he prepared to go up in it.

They immediately began erecting a fort; as soon as the work was somewhat advanced, *M. de la Salle* gave *Joutel* orders to finish it, left him the command of it, and about one hundred men: he took the rest of his people, about sixty in all, with himself, and embarked on the river, with the resolution of going up as high as he could. *Joutel* stayed but a short time after him in the fort which had been begun; every night the savages were roving in the neighbourhood; the French defended themselves against them,

them, but with losses that weakened them. On the 14th of July, *Joutel* received an order from *M. de la Salle* to join him with all his people.

Many good stout men had been killed or taken by the Indians; others were dead with fatigue, and the number of sick increased every day; in a word, nothing could be more unhappy than *M. de la Salle's* situation. He was devoured with grief; but he dissimulated it pretty well, by which means his dissimulation degenerated into a morose obstinacy. As soon as he saw all his people together, he began in good earnest to think of making a settlement, and fortifying it. He was the engineer of his own fort, and being always the first to put his hand to work, every body worked as well as he could to follow his example.

Nothing was wanting but to encourage this good-will of the people, but *M. de la Salle* had not sufficient command of his temper. At the very time when his people spent their forces with working, and had but just as much as was absolutely necessary to live upon, he could not prevail on himself to relax his severity a little, or alter his inflexible temper, which is never seasonable, and less so in a new settlement. It  
is

is not sufficient to have courage, health, and watchfulness, to make any undertaking succeed; many other talents are requisite. Moderation, patience, and disinterestedness, are equally necessary. It is useful to dissimulate now and then, to prevent making evil worse. Gentleness is the best method which every commander can follow.

*M. de la Salle* punished the least faults with an unheard-of cruelty; and seldom any word of comfort came from his mouth to those who suffered with the greatest constancy. He had of course the misfortune to see all his people fall into a state of languor and despondency, which was more the effect of despair, than of excess of labour or scantiness of good nourishment.

Having given his last orders at his fort, he resolved to advance into the country, and began to march on the 12th of January 1687, with *M. de Cavelier* his brother, *Moranget* and the young *Capelier* his nephews, Father *Anastatius* a Franciscan friar, *Youtel*, *Duhaut*, *L'Archeveque de Marne*, a German whose name was *Hiens*, a surgeon named *Liétot*, the pilot *Tessier*, *Saget*, and an Indian who was a good huntsman. I mention them all, because they shall be spoke of in the sequel.

As



As they advanced further into the country, they found it inhabited; and when they were but forty leagues from the nation of the *Cenis*, they heard that there was a Frenchman among those Indians. It was a sailor from Lower *Bretany*, who had lost himself when *M. de la Salle* first came down the *Mississippi*: this poor wretch lived among the *Cenis*, since 1682, having been adopted by them. He did not hope to see Europe again, nothing but chance could procure him the means of returning thither: *Joutel* went to fetch him from amongst those Indians. He only quitted them to be witness of a crime.

The 17th of May, *Moranget* being on a hunting party, and having, as it is said, abused with words *Duhaut*, *Hiens*, and the surgeon *Liétot*, those three men resolved to get rid of him as soon as possible, and to begin with the servant of *M. de la Salle*, and his Indian huntsman who was called *Nika*, who both accompanied *Moranget*, and could have defended him. They communicated their design to *L'Archeveque* and the pilot *Teffier*, who approved of it, and desired to take part in the execution. They did not speak of it to the *Sieur de Marne*, who was with them, and whom they wished to have been able to get away. The next night, whilst the three unhappy victims whom they would sacrifice to their  
revenge

revenge slept very quietly, *Liétot* gave each of them several blows with the hatchet on the head. The Indian and the servant died immediately. *Maranget* raised himself so as to sit upright, without speaking a word; and the murderers obliged the *Sieur de Marne* to dispatch him, threatening to kill him too if he refused; thus, by making him an accomplice of their crime, they wanted to secure themselves against his accusing them.

The first crime is always followed by uneasiness; the greatest villains find it difficult to conquer it: the murderers conceived, that it would not be easy to escape the just vengeance of *M. de la Salle*, unless by preventing him; and this they resolved upon, after deliberating on the means of effecting it. They thought the safest way was to meet him, and surprise all that accompanied him, and so open themselves a way for the murder which they intended to perpetrate.

So strange a resolution could only be inspired by that blind despair, which hurries villains into the abyss which they dig for themselves: an unexpected incident became favourable to them, and delivered into their hands the prey which

VOL. I.

G

they

they sought for. A river that separated them from the camp, and which was considerably increased since they passed it, kept them two days: this retardment, which at first seemed an obstacle to their project, facilitated the execution of it. *M. de la Salle*, wondering that his nephew did not return, nor either of the two men that were with him, determined to go and seek them himself. It was remarked, that he was uneasy when he was going to set out, and inquired with a kind of uncommon concern whether *Moranget* had quarrelled with any one.

He then called *Joutel*, and intrusted him with the command of his camp, ordering him to go his rounds in it from time to time, and to light fires, that the smoke might bring him on his road again, in case he should lose his way; he likewise bid him give no body leave to absent himself. He set out on the 20th, attended by *Father Anastasius* and an Indian. As he approached to the place where the assassins had stopt, he saw some eagles soaring pretty near the place, and concluded that there was some carrion: he fired his gun; and the conspirators, who had not yet seen him, guessing that it was he who was coming, got their arms in readiness. The river was between them and him: *Duhaute*  
and

and *L'Archeveque* crossed it; and seeing *M. de la Salle* advancing slowly; they stopped. *Duhaut* hid himself in the long grass, with his gun cocked, *L'Archeveque* advanced a little more: and a moment after, *M. de la Salle* knowing him, asked him where his nephew was? He answered, that he was lower down. At the same instant *Duhaut* fired; *M. de la Salle* received the shot in his head, and fell down dead.

It was the 20th of May 1687 that this murder was committed near the *Cenis*. Father *Anastsius*, seeing *M. de la Salle* drop down at his feet, expected that the murderers would not spare him, though they should have no other view in it than to get rid of a witness, of their crime: *Duhaut* came near him to quiet him, and told him, that what they had done was an act of despair, and that they had long thought of revenging themselves on *Moranget*, who had endeavoured to ruin them: Father *Anastsius* informed *M. Cavelier* of his brother's death; that gentlemen told them, that if it was their intention to kill him likewise, he would forgive them his death before hand, and he only demanded, as a favour, a quarter of an hour to prepare himself for death. They replied, that he had nothing to fear, and that nobody complained of him.

*Joutel* was not then in the camp; *L'Archeveque*, who was his friend, ran to inform him, that his death was certain if he shewed any repentment of what had happened, or if he pretended to take advantage of the authority with which *M. de la Salle* had invested him. *Joutel*, who was of a very gentle temper, answered, that they should be content with his conduct, and that he believed that they ought to be pleased with the manner in which he had hitherto behaved; and then he returned to the camp.

As soon as *Duhaut* saw *Joutel*, he called out to him, that every one should command by turns. He had already taken all the authority into his hands; and the first use he made of it, was to make himself master of the magazine. He divided it afterwards with *L'Archeveque*, saying, that every thing belonged to him. There were about thirty thousand livres worth of goods, and near twenty-five thousand livres both in coin and in plate.

The assassins had force and boldness on their side; they had shewn themselves capable of the greatest crimes, accordingly they met with no resistance at first. They soon divided, and quarrelled among themselves; they found difficulties

ties in dividing the treasure; they came to blows, and *Hiens* fired his pistol at *Duhaut's* head, who reeled, and fell four yards from the place where he stood. At the same time *Rutel* the sailor, whom *Joutel* fetched from the *Cenis*, fired a gun at *Liétot*. That wretch lived yet several hours, though he had three balls in his body; so the two assassins, one of *M. de la Salle*, and the other of his nephew *Moranget*, were themselves the victims of that spirit of fury, which they had inspired to this unhappy colony.

The Indians knew not what to think of these murderers; they were quite scandalized by them. They were in the right, and could with more reason treat those Frenchmen as barbarians, than we had to consider them as such. Be that as it will, such was the tragic death of *Robert Cavellier, Sieur de la Salle*, a man of abilities, of a great extent of genius, and of a courage and firmness of mind which might have carried him to something very great, if, with these good qualities, he had known how to get the better of his fullen, morose mind, to soften his severity, or rather the roughness of his temper, and check the haughtiness with which he treated not only those who depended entirely upon himself, but even his associates. The most unhappy thing

for the memory of this famous man is, that he has not been pitied by any body, and that the bad success that has attended his undertakings has given him the appearance of an adventurer among those who only judge from appearances. Unhappily they are commonly the greatest number, and their voice is, in a manner, the voice of the people. He has further been reproached with never taking advice from any body, and with having ruined his private affairs by his obstinacy\*.

Thus ended this unlucky undertaking; many things conspired to make it abortive: it would at least have had part of the wished-for success, if a settlement on the mouth of the Mississippi had been the only thing in view, as many people thought it was. It is certain, that when *M. de Beaujeu* abandoned *M. de la Salle* in *St. Bernard's Bay*, the latter soon found out, that he was to the

---

\* In order to diminish the villainy of the deed of *Duhaut*, it has been spread, that *M. de la Salle* had killed young *Duhaut* with his own hands, and that he had treated several others in the same manner; that it was despair and revenge that animated the conspirators, who feared to perish themselves by his injustice and severity. One ought to be so much the more upon one's guard against such calumniating discourses, as it is but too common to increase the faults of the unhappy, and to attribute to them even those which they really have not.

the westward of the river he sought for; if it had been his intention to find it, he might on his first journey to the *Cenis* have obtained guides from those Indians, because they granted some in the sequel to *Joutel* \*; but he wished to come near the Spaniards, in order to take cognizance of the mines of *St. Barbara*, and to seek likewise a *Dorado*. By endeavouring to do too much, he not only did nothing at all, but made all his people perish, and perished himself, and was pitied by nobody.

Before I conclude this letter, let me add some reflections on the folly of men.

The avidity of the Spanish captains must have been very great, as it engaged them to seek for an imaginary *Dorado* or mountain of gold, whilst the whole country they were in abounded in all

G 4

parts

---

\* The *Sieur Joutel* found the *Mississippi* by means of the Indians, who brought him to the *Akanzas*, and from thence into *Canada*; where he arrived, accompanied by one priest, a Recollet friar, a soldier, a sailor, a colonist, and an Indian, who composed a strange sort of caravan. They were all that returned from this expedition. The remains of this unhappy colony perished either through the Indians or through the Spaniards, who took them prisoners, and set them at work in their mines.



parts with that metal. This is a proof, that all the treasures in the world are incapable of satisfying man, as soon as avidity has once gained the empire in his heart.

The Spaniards were not contented with the riches of *Peru*; they must still go to discover a *Dorado*, that is, a country where the rocks and stones are all of gold. The Indians, in order to flatter the avidity of their enemies, and at the same time to get them out of their country, never ceased amusing them with accounts of the gold, silver, diamonds, and pearls with which that country abounded. Their desire of getting rid of their unwelcome guests, induced them to spare nothing towards persuading them of the existence of this pretended country. The Spaniards believed these accounts, in which they were interested; and this is said to be the origin of the famous *Dorado*, which has made so much noise in the world.

The report was current, that, after passing a long chain of mountains covered with snow, one entered upon a vast plain exceedingly well peopled, in which was the *Dorado* that every one wished to discover.

*Quesada,*

*Quesada*, with two hundred and fifty brave soldiers, set out immediately in search of it. On *St. James's* day they perceived, from the top of a mountain, some vast plains which resembled a sea; and when they were descended to the foot of the mountain, they built there a town, and called it *San-Yago*, in remembrance of the day on which they discovered the plain; they likewise furnished it *Las Atalayas* \*, in order to point out the design of their journey, which was to discover the *Dorado*. This town exists still in the place, which is marked in the maps as a monument which seems to engage posterity to go out upon the discovery of this unknown treasure. *Quesada* passed through the woods of *Ayrico* with excessive trouble, and arrived at *Timana* in 1543, having lost almost all his people.

*Orellana* undertook the same voyage in that year; he set out from *Peru*, descended the river *Maragnon* or 'of the Amazons, came to the coast, and neglected nothing towards arriving at the mountain of gold; but all his pains were useless, and he gained no more honour by the under-

---

\* *Atalaya* signifies to discover, or to spy, in Spanish: *Atalaya*, a tower or fort from whence one discovers: *Las Atalayas* is the plural.

undertaking than that of having completed one of the most horrible voyages that ever were heard of. About the same time *Philip de Ure*, fearing that *Quesada* would profit alone by this discovery, set out from *Coro* in the province of *Venezuela*, together with *Aquito*, the Lieutenant *Volacazar*, and one hundred and twenty men, but a *Cacique* having told him, that most of the people of *Quesada* had perished in the undertaking, he went to the southward along the river *Guabari*, and stopped, as Father *Simon* and Father *Piedrahata* assure us, at the first settlement of *Omaguas*, in a very bad plight. But what will not men undertake for the sake of gold! *Auri sacra fames, quid non mortalia pectora cogis \* ?*

But to what purpose is all this philosophy.—The stay which I intend to make here, will enable me to send you a new letter on the subject of the most interesting particulars of the politics and form of government of the nations who inhabit this country. I am,

S I R, &c.

*At the Akanzas,*

Oct. 29. 1751.

---

\* Here follows a dull quotation from a Spanish author upon this subject, which we thought proper to omit. F.




L E T T E R V.

*To the same.*

*Description of the Manners of the Nation of Akan-  
zas, their Religion and Manner of carrying on  
War, the Goodness and Fertility of their Country.*

S I R,


 Hope the description I shall give of  
 this Indian nation, by drawing your  
 attention upon their particular charac-  
 ter, will convey a general idea of all the nations  
 of North America. There is indeed very little  
 difference among them, in regard to their cu-  
 stoms and their way of thinking, and especially  
 in regard to a Supreme Being, which in their  
 language they call *Coyocopchill*, which signifies  
*the great Spirit, or the Master of life.*

The

The *Akanzas* live on the banks of a river that bears their name; it arises in *New Mexico*, and falls into the *Mississippi*. These Indians are tall, well made, brave, good swimmers, very expert in hunting and fishing, and entirely devoted to the French, of which they have given marks on several occasions.

I spoke, in my preceding letter, of an old man of this nation, who said he had seen *M. de la Salle*. This good Indian added, that from that time he conceived a very great esteem for the French; that they were the first nation of white men he had seen, and since that time he had always recommended it to his nation, whose chief he was, never to receive any other European allies than the French, who were immediately received at his request: in reality these people never would have any thing to do with the conjuration of the general massacre of the French colony at the *Natches*. I must do these good Indians that justice; they are always at war with the *Tchicachas* (Chick-saws) who gave the *Natches* a retreat.

The country of the *Akanzas* is one of the finest in the world; the soil of it is so fertile, that it produces, without any culture, European wheat,

wheat, all kinds of food, and good fruit, unknown in *France*; game of all kinds is plentiful there; wild oxen\*, stags, roebucks, bears, tygers,

\* The here enumerated animals, we intend to make better known, by adding the names in Dr. Linnæus Syft. Nat. and Mr. Pennant's Syn. of Quadr. or his British Zoology.

1. WILD OXEN. *Bos Bifon*, Linn. American ox, Penn. Syn. Quad. 8.

2. STAGS. *Cervus Elaphus*, Linn. Stag deer, Penn. Syn. Quad. 49.

3. ROEBUCKS. As it is dubious whether this species is in *North America*, this is probably the *Dama Virginiana*, Ray. Syn. Quad. 86,; or *Virginian deer*, Penn. Syn. Quadrup. 51.

4. BEARS. *Urfus Arctos*, Linn. Black bear, Penn. Syn. Quad. 190.

5. TYGERS. There are no true tygers in all the new continent, and what is called thus must be the *Cugacurana* of *Marcgrave*, and Ray. Syn. Quad. 169. or *Brown cat*, Penn. Syn. Quad. 179.

6. LEOPARDS. *Felis Pardus*, Linn. Panther, Penn. Syn. Quad, p. 171. note. Mr. Pennant has proved, from very good authorities, that this species is found in America, contrary to what *M. de Buffon* says; who, though a very great naturalist, by far superior to many who make free with

tygers, leopards, foxes, wild cats, rabbits, turkies, grouse, pheasants, partridges, quails, turtles, wood-pigeons, swans, geese, bustards, ducks

---

with him, is however a man who never departs from an opinion which he once has embraced, and which he will carry by his eloquence in spite of the most creditable authorities to the contrary.

7. FOXES. *Canis Vulpes*, Linn. Fox, Penn. Syn. Quad. 152. with all its varieties, the cross fox, the black fox, and the brand fox.

8. WILD CATS. *Felis silvestris tigrina*, Brisson. Quad. 193. Cayenne Cat, Penn. Syn. Quad. 182.

9. RABBETS. There were originally no rabbits in America, but they were imported by the Spaniards, and are now greatly increased; whether these, here called rabbits, on the river *Mississippi*, are the true rabbits, or whether they are that kind of hare which is peculiar to North America, cannot be decided. The North American hare seems to be the Alpine hare, Penn. Syn. Quad. 249; it is less in size than the European common hare, and a medium between hare and rabbit, according to Kalm's *North Amer.* I. p. 105.

10. TURKIES. *Meleagris Gallopavo*, Linn. Le dindon, *Planches subminées*, 97.

11. GROUSE. There are about seven different kinds of grouse in *North America*.

(2) Tetraz

ducks of all kinds, teals, divers, snipes, water-hens, golden plovers, stares, thrushes, and other birds which are not known in Europe.

On

- (a) *Tetrao Phasianellus*, Linn. The long-tailed grouse, *Edw.* 117.
- (b) — *Canadensis*, Linn. The spotted grouse, *Edw.* 71.
- (c) — *Lagopus*, Linn. The white grouse, *Edw.* 72. *Pl. enl.* 129.
- (d) — *Cupido*, Linn. The pinnated grouse, *Cat.* III. 1.
- (e) — *Umbellus*, Linn. The ruffed grouse, *Edw.* 248.
- (f) — *Canace*, Linn. The striated grouse, *Pl. enl.* 131. & 132. *Briff.* I. 203. t. 20. f. 1. 2.
- (g) — *Togatus*, Linn. The shoulder-knot grouse, *Pl. enl.* 104. *Briff.* I. 207. t. 221. f. 1.

Which of these are found so far south as *Louisiana* cannot be determined.

12. PHEASANTS. This is so vague a denomination, that it is next to impossible to find out which kind of pheasant the author means; for there is but one pheasant in *America*, in *Cayenne*, and *Guiana*, and therefore it is dubious whether this bird is found so far north as *Louisiana*: I am therefore inclined to believe, the author meant the *long-tailed grouse*, which bears a great similarity to a pheasant, and is found as far as *Virginia*, which is not above three or four degrees more north than the *Akanzas*.

13. PARTRIDGES. This seems to be the American partridge, *Cat.* III. 12. *Tetrao Virginianus*, Linn.

14. QUAILS.



On my arrival at the *Akanzas*, the young warriors received me with the dance of the calumet. It is necessary that I should inform you, that

---

14. QUAILS. *Tetrao Mexicanus*, *Linn.* Loufiana quail, *Pl. enl.* 149.

15. TURTLES. *Columba Canadensis*, *Linn.* Canada turtle, *Pl. enl.* 176.

16. WOOD-PIGEONS. *Columba migratoria*, *Linn.* Migratory pigeon. *Kalm*, II. p. 82. t. 2. *Columba Carolinensis*, *Linn.* Caroline pigeon, *Cat.* I. 24.

17. SWANS. *Anas Cygnus*, *Linn.* *Br. Zool.* p. 440. *Edward* 150.

18. GEESE. *Anas Anser*, *Linn.* Wild goose, *Br. Zool.* 447. *Anas crythropus*, *Linn.* White fronted goose, *Br. Zool.* 450. *Edw.* 153. *Anas Canadensis*, *Linn.* Canada goose, *Edw.* 151. *Pl. enl.* 346.

19. BUSTARDS, *Otis Tarda*, *Linn.* This is the first time that I find a bustard mentioned among the American birds. As they are not uncommon in France, I am inclined to think the author's account to be true; and as he has already mentioned the turkies before, it is not likely that he should confound the bustard and turkey.

20. DUCKS of all kinds. There are at least twenty kinds of ducks known to be in America. *Vid. Forster's Catalogue of North American animals*, p. 16: 17.

21. TEALS.

that dancing enters into all sorts of transactions with these nations; they have religious, physical, merry, ceremonious, warlike, pacific, nuptial, funeral, playful, hunting, and lewd dances: the last is abolished since our arrival in America.

The dance of impudicity was performed privately and in night-time, by the light of a great fire. All that entered into the lascivious assembly,

21. TEALS. I suppose the author means by teals the lesser kinds of ducks, as the harlequin, pied, brown, white-faced, blue-wing, &c. and common teal.

22. DIVERS are of four kinds in North America. Vid. *Forster's Cat. N. Amer.* 16.

23. SNIPES. There are likewise several birds of this kind in *North America*; so that without a more detailed denomination, it is impossible to determine the species.

24. WATER-HENS. Of this kind is the *Rallus Carolinensis*, *Linn.* the Carolina rail, and the common water-hen, or *Fulica chloropus*, *Linn.* in *N. Amer.*

25. GOLDEN PLOVERS. *Charadrius apricarius*, *Linn. Edw.* 140.

26. STARES. *Sturnus Ludovicianus*, *Linn. Pl. enl.* 256. *Briff.* II. 449. t. 42. f. 1. *Cat.* I. 13. This bird has mistakenly appeared in the books of the modern ornithologists

Vol. I. H under

bly were obliged to *strike against the post* \*; that is, to swear that they never would reveal what they had seen or done in this dissolute ball: the dancers of both sexes appeared quite naked there, in attitudes and gestures of prostitution, accompanied with songs of the same kind, which you must excuse my transcribing, though, in the language of the Indians, they are purely pieces of genteel wit.

The *Akanzas* have expert fellows among them, who would perhaps amaze our jugglers.  
I saw

under two names: *Briffon* calls it, in II. 242. an American ouzel; and II. 449. he represents it as a Louisiana stare. *Linnaeus* makes likewise two birds of it; he calls it a lark, p. 289. *Alauda magna*, and p. 290. a stare, *Sturnus Ludovicianus*; but, upon comparison, it may be easily determined, that both are but a stare, and that it ought to be erased from among the *Larks* and *Ouzels*.

27. THRUSHES. There are at least seven *North American* thrushes, which of them are upon the river *Mississippi* cannot be determined for want of information, F.

\*. Whenever the Indians swear or take oaths, they take a club with which they strike against a post, calling to mind their fine actions in war, and promising to keep their word religiously: an oath of this nature is irrevocable among them: every Cacique swears to lead his nation well, and strikes the post; without taking that oath, he cannot be installed in the dignity.

I saw one of them, who, in my presence, performed a trick which will appear incredible to you; after some wry mouths, he swallowed a rib of a stag seventeen inches long, held it with his fingers, and drew it out of his stomach again. He went to *New Orleans* to shew his agility to the governor and the officers of the garrison; this the Indians call acting the physician.

The *Akanzas* declare war with the following ceremonies. They make a feast in the hut of the chief, where dog's flesh is served up, which is the principal food of warriors; because they say, that a creature which is so brave as to be killed in the defence of his master, must give them valour. He that kills one of the enemy's dogs is likewise received as a warrior; but he must bring the scalp of the dog, that is, the skin from the head, as if it were the scalp of a man, without which the others would not believe him. The Indians have dogs in great numbers, both for hunting, and to secure them from being surpris'd by the enemies.

After the feast of which I have spoken, the great chief calls together an assembly of warriors.

The assembly is held in the middle of the village, in a great hut made on purpose, which they call the hut of the council. The chief and most considerable men place themselves, according to their respective ranks, on mats or on tyger-skins. When they are all seated, the chief or orator puts himself into the midst of the assembly, and holds his speech with a loud voice: he represents to his nation, that it would be a shame for them not to revenge the affront they received from such or such a nation; that if they did take them to account for it, they would for the future be looked upon as women\*. At that instant all the assembly applauds, by saying, *Heu! heu!* The chief then takes a bundle of rods, and presents it to the assembly; all that are desirous of going to war take one of the rods, and by this means they are enlisted.

The next morning the women run through the village, crying, “ Young men and warriors, “ who received the rods, set out, go to war, re- “ venge the deaths of our relations, allies, and “ friends ;

---

\* When an Indian is called a *woman* or an *old woman*, it is an affront, which signifies a man without courage, a coward.

“ friends ; and do not return till you are stained  
 “ with the blood of our enemies, and bring with  
 “ you their scalps \*.”

Then a young Indian takes the trouble to paint red a club, which they call a *head-breaker* ; this club is brought upon the limits of the enemies country ; there they cut a piece out of a tree, and with vermilion they draw on it two arrows across each other, which is their symbol of war : the red colour signifies, that the nation desires revenge, and will not be satisfied till it has shed the blood of their enemies.

Before they set out, the chief of the nation calls another assembly, which is generally followed by a feast, to which he invites his allies. The chief presents the confederates with rods, to engage them to march with them as auxiliary troops. At the end of the repast they sing and

H 3

dance

---

\* The Indians are used to pluck the skins from their enemies heads whom they kill in battle ; they count the number of the slain by these scalps, which they bring home like trophies on poles. We generally give them, in goods, for the King's account, the value of ten crowns (écus) for each scalp of our enemies.

dance the dance of war\*. All the young men are painted red; it is really curious to see them dance. He that expresses by dance the discovery or the surprize, watches his enemy, keeping in a stooping posture; all at once he falls upon him, his club in hand, making horrible cries, as is done in a real action. His comrade drops as if he were thunderstruck, stiffening all his muscles as an epileptic; after which the other represents, dancing, the method of scalping the dead enemy; this is done with a knife which he has in his hand, he makes an incision on the forehead, and round the neck of his enemy; he places his long nails therein, he puts both his knees against the shoulders of the captive, and with a sudden push with his knees and pull with his hands, he takes up the skin with the hair on it, from the head. All this is represented in singing and dancing to the tune of a drum and  
a *chi-*

---

\* The song of war is conceived in the following terms :  
 " I go to war to avenge the death of my brothers ; I shall  
 " kill, I shall exterminate, I shall plunder, I shall burn my  
 " enemies : I shall bring away slaves, I shall devour their  
 " heart, dry their flesh, drink their blood ; I shall bring  
 " their scalps, and make cups of their skulls ;" and more  
 such expressions, which are full of cruelty, and shew a thirst  
 after revenge and slaughter.

a *chichikois* \*, which marks the time and the cadence.

The Indians never go to war without consulting their *Manitou* †, to whom they attribute all their good or bad luck. If the *Manitou* has not been favourable to them, they quit him without any ceremony, and take another. The chief, before he goes to war, undergoes a very rigid fasting, and paints his body black during that time. After the fast, he washes himself, and paints his body and his face red. He harangues his warriors before the false deity, after which every one prepares his baggage. Sometimes they go to war four or five hundred leagues from their own country.

Their baggage, in time of war, consists of a bear's skin, which serves as a bed; a wild ox's skin, with which they cover themselves; a tyger-cat's skin, which serves as a sack to put the calumet or tobacco-pipe in; a *head-breaker* or  
H 4 club;

---

\* This is a gourd in which they put a kind of little beads, they likewise fasten such beads to their feet.

† False Indian deity; sometimes a dried raven or a snake; they likewise employ for that purpose amphibious creatures and quadrupeds.



club; and a little hatchet, which they make use of in order to make huts in the woods.

Their arms consist of a gun or musket, the horn of an ox to put the gun-powder in, which they hang round the body with a string, together with a little bag in which they put their balls, the flint, and a screw; besides this, a bow and a quiver full of arrows; the latter are very useful for hunting. They never employ their fire-arms at any animals, when they are upon any expedition against their enemies, lest the noise might serve to discover them. They agree amongst themselves upon the method of surprising their enemies; for the Indians place all their glory in the knowledge of this kind of war, which is generally fatal to those who are the object of it.

They take very little care with regard to victuals; every one has a little bag of flour of Indian corn or maize, roasted as we do coffee, and when he is hungry he takes a spoonful of water in which some of this flour or meal is diluted, which he keeps till they are very near the enemy.

Though

Though the Indians are sometimes three or four days without eating, they are not ill at all from it, but continue their road as before : they contract their girdle round their belly, in proportion as it grows more empty, and diminishes in size ; in a word, they are indefatigable.

When the Indians have made a stroke at the enemy, as they term it, some young warriors immediately set out, to bring the news of the victory to the village. They make their arrival known, by some cries, which mark the number of prisoners, that of the dead, and that of the scalps which they bring with them. The women prepare to receive the prisoners, and to give them a hearty drubbing with sticks. They have likewise a right to decide who of the captives shall die, for they are brought before them with their hands tied, and painted black\*. Those women who have lost their husbands, or sons, are at liberty to take captives to replace them. They can adopt them as husbands or as sons, and they are then immediately set free.

Those who are not adopted must be burnt at a slow fire : to that purpose their head is scalped,

---

\* Those who are thus painted are to be burnt in the midst of the village, unless the women adopt them.

ed, and they are fastened to two posts which are driven into the ground, with a piece of wood lying across them \*; then all the young people exercise their fury upon them, and they endure the greatest torments without complaining; on the contrary, they sing till they expire, saying that they are true men, and that they fear neither fire nor death; they laugh at their tormentors, and tell them that they do not make them suffer enough; that if they were in their hands they would plague them much worse; that the fire must be applied to such and such parts, and that they are there the most sensible to pain. It is to be remarked, that when they dispose themselves to march against their enemies, they take care to paint their bodies red; so that, when they attack the enemy, with such howls as if they were bewitched, they really look like a troop of devils let loose from hell †. They are good towards their friends, but very cruel towards their enemies.

As

---

\* The captives are obliged to sing and dance round these posts.

† The Indians in general, both men and women, have no hair on their bodies; besides those on the head; they say, that in this particular we resemble the beasts, and they say the same when they see us eat herbs and fallad.

As to religion, they believe the existence of a great Spirit, whom they adore under the form of a serpent or a crocodile; they give him a kind of divine service. They fear the devil, whom they call a bad spirit. They likewise adore the sun and moon. When it thunders, they imagine that the *Lord of life* speaks to them in an angry tone.

I must not close my letter without informing you of a singular event, which, though of very little importance, may however be very useful to me, during my stay in *America*. The *Akams* have adopted me; they have acknowledged me as a warrior and a chief, and have given me the mark of it, which is the figure of a roe-buck imprinted on my thigh. I have willingly undergone this painful operation, which was performed in the following manner: I was seated on a tyger's skin; an Indian burnt some straw, the ashes of which he diluted with water: he made use of this simple mixture to draw the roe-buck; he then followed the drawing with great needles, pricking them deep into the flesh, till the blood comes out; this blood mixing with the ashes of the straw, forms a figure which can never be effaced. I smoked the calumet after that; they spread white skins under my feet,

on

on which I walked; they danced before me crying out for joy; they told me afterwards, that I could go to all the people who were their allies, present the calumet, and shew my mark, and I would be well received; that I was their brother, and that if any one killed me, they would kill him; now I am a noble *Akanza*. These people think they have done me all the honour due to a defender of their country, by thus adopting me: and I regard this honour almost like that which the *Marshal de Richelieu* received, when his name was inscribed in the golden book at *Genoa* among the noble Genoese. It is true, there is some difference between an inscription and the operation I have undergone; I cannot express it to you how much I have suffered by it; I did all I could to prevent shewing how much I was affected; on the contrary, I joked with the Indian women that were present; and all the spectators, amazed at my insensibility, cried out for joy, and danced round about me, saying, I was a true man. The pain has been very violent, and I have had the fever from it for a week together. You cannot believe how fond the *Akanzas* are of me since that time. This is all I had to say upon this subject: some time this month we intend to continue our journey to the *Illinois*. As the season is much advanced,

vanced, and we have yet three hundred leagues to go, we run the risk of being stopped by the ice, and of wintering on the road. We have been obliged to stop here for preparing the biscuit necessary for so long a voyage; for in this season we must combat both the current and the north wind. According to all appearances, I shall not be able to write before next year. This letter sets out by a boat, which will arrive in time before the departure of a man of war for *France*, where I hope my letter will find you in good health. I beg you would let me hear from you; for I assure you, you can do me no greater pleasure.

I am, &c.

*At the Akanzas, the 6th  
of November 1751.*

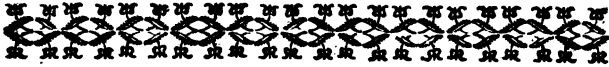
P. S. I found a Mestizo Indian among the *Akanzas*; and, upon questioning him concerning his origin, I heard that he was the son of *Rutel*, that sailor from *Bretany* who lost himself, when *M. de la Salle* came down the *Mississippi* in 1682, and of whom I have had the honour of speaking before.

This

This demi-Indian added, that *Rutel* his father was found by the *Cenis*, an Indian nation, who adopted him; he received one of their girls as his wife, in the quality of a warrior; because, having made use of his musket in a battle against some enemies of the *Cenis*, the explosion of that weapon, which was as yet unknown to them, frightened them, and put them to flight.

This *Rutel* having afterwards taught the Indians the method of going with oars and sails in their canoes and piraguas, he enabled them to defeat a little fleet of their enemies; this manner of navigating being till then unknown to the nation, and drew their gratitude and veneration upon him; they revered him as the greatest man in the world; and the famous *Ruiter*, who, from a common sailor, became Lieutenant and Admiral of the United Provinces, was perhaps less revered than *Rutel* was among the *Cenis*.

L E T.



L E T T E R VI.

*To the same.*

*An Account of the Author's Navigation from the A-  
kanzas to the Illinois. The King's Boat St.  
Louis, on which the Author was, is overfet; he  
falls into the Missifippi, and an Akanza saves  
his life.*

S I R,

I AM now, thank God, arrived at Fort  
Chartres, after running many risks on  
this long and troublesome voyage.  
We fet out from the *Akanzas* the 7th of Novem-  
ber, on our voyage hither. We have gone  
three hundred leagues without meeting with any  
village or habitation. As this extent of country  
is absolutely uninhabited, there are happily great  
flocks of wild oxen, stags, and roe-bucks, to be  
met with, especially in this season when the wa-  
ters



ters are low. These animals are obliged to come in flocks to the river to drink, we often killed them as they crossed it, and likewise some bears were thus got. The *Akanza* Indians generally come to hire themselves to the French, in order to make them subsist by hunting upon the road. These hunters set out in the morning in pira-guas; they kill the oxen which they meet on the banks of the river, and the boats that follow after them take on board the meat, which lies ready for them on the shore.

The Indians take care to keep the tongue, and the flesh from the back of the animals which they have killed, and to present these bits to the commander and officers of the convoy; after which a serjeant or a corporal distributes the flesh to the soldiers in each boat: the pleasure of hunting amply repays for the fatigues of the voyage. The game is so common in the neighbourhood of the river *St. François* \*, that, when we went on shore in those parts, it was impossible to sleep, on account of the multitudes of swans, cranes, geese, bustards, and ducks, that were continually going up and down in these watery places. On approaching the country of the  
*Illinois,*

---

\* This river comes from the country of the *Hautaux*.

*Illinois*, you see, in the day-time, whole clouds of turtle-doves or wood-pigeons. A circumstance that will perhaps be incredible, is, that they often eclipse the sun; these birds, living merely upon acorns and the seeds of beech-trees, in the woods, are excellent in autumn; sometimes eighty of them are killed at one shot. What a pity that so fine a country is not inhabited, or is only inhabited by brutes!

M. *de Macarty*, an Irishman, and commander of the convoy, having had some fits of the gout, and fearing to be obliged to winter on the road, resolved to go before the rest, when we were at the juncture of the *Ohio* with the *Mississippi*, thirty leagues from the *Illinois*. He took the best rowers out of all the boats, and put them on board his boat, and, without troubling himself about the others, he left them behind, contrary to M. *de Vaudreuil's* injunctions; however, the law of nature dictates to every body the order of assisting others mutually, in case of an attack from an enemy, or some other accident, such as happened to the boat *St. Louis*, on board of which I was. It got upon a sand-bank, and they were obliged to unload it almost entirely before they could set it a-float again, which made

me lose two days, and prevented my joining the convoy again.

To increase my misfortunes, when I was but fourteen leagues from the *Illinois*, my boat, three days after it was stranded, ran against a tree, of which the *Mississippi* is full, and especially in time of low water; the shock burst the boat, and such a quantity of water got in, that it sunk in less than an hour's time. By this accident I lost all I had: I ran the risk of perishing too; for I had thrown myself into a piragua, but it was so full of goods saved from the wreck, that it overset; several soldiers were drowned, and I should have shared the same fate, had it not been for a generous *Akonza*, who, not fearing the severity of the season, leapt into the water, and seized me by my riding-coat.

After these adventures I am at last arrived at Fort *Chartres*: I had not been long here, when I was witness to an event which might have had very unhappy consequences. The *Pehenguichias* and the *Ouyatanons* had agreed upon the total ruin of five French villages among the *Illinois*. M. de *Maçarty* had sent me before-hand to prepare quarters for some troops that came in  
a con-

of a convoy. The Indians had meditated their enterprise, and intended to come before the convoy. I was then at the *Kaskaskias*, where *M. de Montcharvau* commanded, who could not justly know the whole extent of the plot of those barbarians. These were spread in the houses of the inhabitants; by their caresses, their affection, and calling to mind the massacre of the *Natches*, we suspected their design.

On such occasions as these, an officer feels all the weight of the command. *M. de Montcharvau* was not discouraged; he was seconded by *M. de Gruise*, an intelligent, brave officer. He held a council with the oldest and most considerable people of the place; and did me the honour to consult me in this circumstance: it was more through his goodness than through necessity, because I was newly arrived, and consequently little acquainted with the situation of affairs in that neighbourhood. I will however venture to say, that he was pleased with the advice I gave, though it was a very simple one. My opinion was, that, in order to penetrate the design of these Indians, we should keep on the defensive, without shewing the least suspicion: that we should send out some armed inhabitants on horseback, as if they went a-hunting; recom-

mending it to them, that, after they had gone the rounds, they should return into the village full gallop, as if something had happened to them; this was to give a false alarm. There remained nothing further to be done in that case, but to examine the countenances of the Indians, who would certainly betray themselves. This advice was followed; the Indians believed the French had discovered their plot; they intended to execute it on Christmas-day, when the people came from the great mass; they had exactly inquired after that day, asking, in their way, when that day came on which the Son of the great Spirit came into the world.

As soon as they believed they were discovered, they thought only of making their escape; we fired upon them, and killed twenty-two on the spot. A serjeant, called *La Jeunesse*, a Creble, and a good hunter, killed four in my presence. *M. de Gruise*, on his side, attacked those who were in the Jesuits house, he wounded several of them, and took five alive, among whom there was one *Illinois*; they were put in irons.

*M. de Macarty* hastened to dispatch messengers to *New Orleans* to the *Marquis de Vaudreuil*, to give him an account of this expedition; the governor

vernor sent back orders to deliver the prisoners to their countrymen, who came crying, the calumet in hand, and disavowed the plot, saying their people had lost their senses, and that the English had taken their senses from them. They received peace very thankfully, and all is quiet at present; however, for precaution's sake, the inhabitants have received orders to carry their muskets when they go to mass; and the officer of the guard to place two sentinels at the church-door during divine service.

I must not forget to mention to you, Sir, that all this passed without our having a single man killed or wounded. The Indians threw away their cloaths and their clubs to run the better; the vigilance of M. de *Montcharvaux* the commandant, and of M. de *Gruise* the major, has prevented the conspiracy, at the moment when the plot was to be executed. I am now returned to Fort *Chartres*, where we lead a pretty peaceable life; I cannot send any great news, but I will communicate some little anecdotes which may amuse you, and will at least give you an idea of our Indians.

I had hired an Indian for my hunter during winter; he belonged to the village of the *Mit-*

*chigamias* ; one day having got a very great quantity of game, instead of bringing it to me, he went to treat \* with some Frenchmen, who gave him brandy in exchange, of which he drank so much as to lose the use of his reason. As he entered my lodgings in this condition, I received him very ill ; I took away the musket which I had given him, and turned him off by pushing him out of doors : he came, however, into my kitchen against my will, lay down in it, and would not go out of it. As soon as he was in his senses again, he well conceived what a great fault he had committed ; and, being willing to atone for it, he took a gun, powder, and shot, and went out. The next day he returns, and comes in, very haughtily, loaded with game : he had round his naked body a girdle, between which all the heads of the wild fowls were put ; he loosened it, and threw them into the middle of my room ; he then sat down near my fire, without speaking ; he lighted his calumet, and giving it me to smoke out of it, he said, “ I own I had lost my  
“ senses yesterday, but I have found them again :  
“ I ac-

---

\* They call *treating*, the exchange or barter of European merchandize against the furs which the Indians take in hunting.

“ I acknowledge my fault ; and I beg thee to  
 “ excuse it. I agree that I had deserved the  
 “ treatment I received, being turned out of thy  
 “ hut ; thou hast done well to let me come in  
 “ again, because, if the other Indians had heard  
 “ of it, they would at the least dispute reproach  
 “ me with having been turned out of the hut of  
 “ the chief *Great Nose* \*.”

Many Europeans make no difference between the Indians and brutes, imagining that they have neither reason nor common sense. However, the circumstance which I have now related, and a great many more, sufficiently shew, that these people are susceptible of sentiments of honour ; they know how to do themselves justice when they are wronged, and know very well when they do ill. There are nations among the Europeans, of whom one may remark as ridiculous and barbarous customs as among the American Indians.

To return to my hunter ; you know very well, that drunkenness debases men to the rank

I 4 of

---

\* An epithet the Indians gave me to distinguish me from the other officers, to each of whom they gave such denominations, relative to the good or bad qualities they observed in them.



of brutes, and that this vice is corrected with difficulty even amongst the French. The Indians imitate them easily in it, and say the white people have taught them to drink the *fiery water*\*.

One day my Indian found the door of the King's magazine open; he sneaked in like a serpent, got to a barrel of brandy, and shed half of it, by endeavouring to fill a bottle with it. This accident obliged me to dismiss him; however, as he was a good hunter, and had only one fault, his wife begged me to give him physic, to prevent his drinking: I willingly undertook the cure, with the assistance of his wife and relations. Once this hunter was drunk, but desired still more brandy; I got the people to tell him I had some, but that I was very tenacious of it. He came immediately, and asked me for some: I said, I had brandy, but I would not give it for nothing. He said he was poor; however, if I would take his wife, he would hire her to me for a month. I answered, that the chiefs of the white warriors did not come to the red men to enjoy their wives; that if he would sell me his son, I would willingly take him as a slave, and

---

\* Thus they call *brandy*.

and give him in return a barrel of brandy; we made the bargain in presence of several witnesses, and he delivered his son to me.

I was ready to laugh at this farce, from the very beginning of it. I made him drink upon the bargain some brandy, into which I had put long pepper. When he had drunk it, he was bound, and brought to sleep. When he was recovered of his drunkenness, the Cacique of the village and his relations, who were in the secret, came to him into his hut, where he lay upon a mat; they displayed to him all the horror of the unnatural action he had committed by selling his own offspring. The poor Indian came crying to me, and said, *Indagé wai panis*, i. e. I am unworthy of living; I do no longer deserve to bear the tender name of father. He was very angry at the brandy I had given him to drink, and which had fired all his stomach; he called it *urine of the chief of hell*, that is, of the evil spirit that caused it.

His wife, who is naturally humorous, and who was diverting herself at his expence, asked him very coolly where his son was? He still excused himself, saying, that, knowing me to be very kind, he expected I would return him his son;

son; that he knew the grand chief of the French \*, and the father of the red men, had no slaves in his empire. I told him he was in the right, but that I had adopted his son, and would take him in that quality with me to France, in order to make him a Christian, and that all the furs of his nation would not be sufficient to redeem him.

As the relations seemed to be grieved, they advised the drunkard Indian to go to the *chief of the prayer*, or the man that speaks with the great Spirit; for thus they call the priests: I told him, that if the chief of the prayer † required it, I should not be contrary to him; I would return him his son, on condition that he should be baptised, and that I should be his godfather; that as to himself, I required from him an abjuration of drunkenness, which had proved so fatal to him. He said my words were strong, and he should remember them while he lived; he begged I would adopt him as a brother, and said he was going to strike at the post ‡.

Since

---

\* The French King.

† The Abbé *Gagnon*, of the order of St. Sulpitius, and chaplain of Fort *Chartres*.

‡ The Indian method of taking an oath. See Letter V.

Since that time he has never drank wine, or any spirituous liquors; I have sent people to offer them to him, but he always refused them, saying, that he had struck at the post, and that the Lord of life would be angry with him; that I had told him that this Spirit could not be deceived: he recollected that once I had named the number of glasses of brandy which he had drunk, without my having seen him; to which he had answered, that it was very true, and that he believed that the great Spirit that sees every thing must have told me of it. I took the following method when I wanted to know how many drams my Indian had taken. I left a clean glass near a barrel of brandy; the Indian, being alone, was tempted to drink a glass; after which I ordered the glass to be washed in hot water, and put in its place again; and every time he drank, my people always did the same thing. Accordingly it was very easy for me to tell him, thou hast taken so many drams; he was always amazed at it, and thought I was a forcerer.

I have often remarked, that the Indians are highly pleased when the French caresses their little children; likewise, in order to make myself beloved and feared by them at the same time, when-

whenever I had reason to be displeas'd with their behaviour, I made use of this method: the more I seem'd vexed and angry at the fathers, the more I affected friendship for their children; I caress'd them, and gave them European toys. The Indians readily guess'd, that as I had no reason to complain of their wives and children, I did not love them less than before, and was only vexed at those who had offended me, without extending my anger upon their families. This mov'd their heart, and consequently they went out, kill'd some wild fowls, brought them to me, and, throwing them on the floor, said, "This is to appease thee, be no longer angry with us." I immediately answer'd, I willingly forget the past, when I see you come back with your wits, meaning when you do not come empty handed. A father's heart is the same all over the world; every father is pleas'd with the friendship which is shewn to his children, who make returns by their caresses.

You can well conceive, that a mere trifle can gain me the friendship of these people; and that it depends only upon the method of acting with them, to attach them to one's self at all events. But let this suffice for this time; I think I must recall to your mind the plan I purpos'd

sed to follow; I only examine the situation of the places where I stop, and, during my stay, I shall apply particularly to know the genius of the people with whom I am to live for a time; and I think this study not beneath a traveller. You are a soldier and a philosopher; I am persuaded, that what I shall give you an account of will please you; for I flatter myself, that you depend upon the fidelity of your historian: indeed, I mean to assert nothing but what I am an eye-witness of; for I can neither invent nor exaggerate. I am, S I R, &c.

*At Fort Chartres, among the Illinois,  
the 28th of March 1752.*

L E T -



## L E T T E R VII.

*To the same.*

*Description of the War of the Nations of Foxes against the Illinois, of which the Author has been an Eye-witness. Account how the French settled among these People.*

S I R,



HAVE enquired after the manner in which the French settlement has been made here. The country of the *Illinois* was discovered by our Canadian hunters; they found its climate very good, being in forty degrees north latitude, settled on it, and made an alliance with the natives. Many people among them married Indian girls, of which the greatest part became Christians: and after the discovery of *Louisiana*, the India Company sent many families

lies over hither, who lived and multiplied here. There are now five great villages of French inhabitants in these parts \*. The most considerable place is called *Kaskakias*, a name of the tribe of an *Illinois* settlement, which is about half a league from it. The *Sieur Saussier*, an engineer, has made a plan for constructing a new fort here, according to the intention of the court. It shall bear the same name with the old one, which is called *Fort de Chartres*.

The *Illinois* country is one of the finest in the world; it supplies all the lower parts of *Louisiana* with flower. Its commerce consists in furs, lead and salt. There are many salt springs †, that attract the wild oxen, and the roe-bucks, which like the pastures around them very much. Their flesh and tongues are salted, and furnish another branch of commerce to *New Orleans*; and they cure hams, which equal those of *Bayonne*. The fruits are as fine as in *France*.

---

\* The India Company were possessed of Louisiana; but they gave it back to the King in 1731. The five villages of the French are that of the *Kaskakias*, the *Fort Chartres*, *St. Philip*, the *Kaokias*, and the *Prairie du Rocher* (meadow on the rock); there is now a sixth, called *St. Genevieve*.

† Called *Salt-licks*, by the English Planters. F.

The



The *Illinois* have very near the same manners and customs as the Nations I have already spoken of; they only differ in their language. They marry, and often, when they return from hunting, leave each other again, each party going a different way.

The marriage of the Indians is quite in the state of nature, and has no other form than the mutual consent of the parties. As they are not tied by any civil contract, whenever they are dissatisfied with each other, they separate, without ceremony, saying that marriage is a tie of the heart, and that they only marry in order to love each other, and help each other mutually in their wants. I have seen very happy marriages among these people; divorces and polygamy are uncommon amongst them, though the latter is allowed by the laws. An Indian may have two wives if he hunts well; sometimes one Indian marries two sisters, giving it as a reason that they will agree better among themselves, than two that are strangers to each other. The Indian women in general are very laborious; they are commonly told, when they are young, that if they be idle or heavy, they will get a wretched husband. Here avarice, ambition, and many other passions, so common among the Europeans,

Europeans, never stifle the feelings of nature, in a father's breast, or incline him to force his children, and much less to controul them in their inclinations. By an admirable sympathy, deserving of admiration, those only are married, who love each other.

The *Illinois* Indians were formerly the most formidable in *Loufiana*, but the continual wars, which they have been engaged in, against the northern nations, have reduced them to a very small number. The hatred of the *Canada Indians* against them, arises from the incursions which the *Illinois* were used to make into their country, and because they took and killed in these inroads, both the male and female beavers, which among these nations is reckoned a crime and cowardice, because they make a great commerce with the skins of these *amphibia* \*, which they exchange for European goods.

In 1752, the Indians of the tribe of *Koakias* met six Indians of the nation of *Foxes*, hunting †;

VOL. I.

K

they

---

\* Beavers are quadrupeds and probably called, by our author, *amphibia* for no other reason, but because they may be eaten as fish on the *jours maigres* F.

† Their true name is *Outagamis*; they inhabit the country to the west of the Lake *Michigan*.

they took them prisoners, though they were not at war, and resolved to burn them, that they might not give any account of them. One of the *Foxes*, or *Outagamis* was happy enough to escape from the stake he was fastened to, and being pursued by his tormentors, he leaped into a lake, and eluded their researches, by swimming under water. He remained hidden in the rushes, only putting out his head from time to time to take breath. He had the firmness to remain in that posture while his comrades were broiling. In the night time he escaped the watchfulness of the *Illinois*, who thought he was either drowned or eaten by the *armed fish* \*. As he was naked and without arms, he was obliged, in order to subsist upon the road, to eat grass like a beast. Being returned to his nation, he told them what had happened to him with the *Illinois*, and the unhappy fate which they had made his fellow-travellers undergo. Their relations immediately began to grieve for them after their manner. The chief of the nation called an assembly together, for they undertake nothing without a council, the result

---

\* The armed fish in *Louisiana* is exceedingly voracious. His teeth cut the iron of the fish hooks in pieces.

result was to send bundles of rods \* to the chiefs of the tribes, who were their allies, among whom were the *Sioax*, the *Sakis* and the *Kikapous* who marched as auxiliary troops under the standard of the *Foxes*. The army consisted of a thousand warriors; every thing being in readiness, the general of the *Foxes* marched towards the *Illinois*, and chiefly towards the *Mitchigamias* who had given shelter to the *Koakias*.

The warriors being come together to the number of one thousand, they embarked in one hundred and eighty canoes made of birch tree bark, on the river *Ouisconsin* which falls into the *Mississippi*. By the current of the river, and the help of their oars, they were soon brought to their enemies, the *Illinois*.

They passed in good order by the fort of *Koakias* where the Chevalier *de Volsei*, an officer of my detachment, commanded. The van of this fleet of the *Foxes*, consisted of the best runners, who were to go on shore to reconnoitre. They

K 2

landed

---

\* As the Indians have not got the art of writing, the rods mark the number of warriors, and the day of assembling for the departure of the army.

landed about a quarter of a league from the *Mitchigamias* village, which was surrounded within a musket shot by a wood; their enemies being far from expecting such a visit.

The *Foxes* had fixed upon *Corpus Christi* day for fighting the *Illinois*. They knew that the latter would come to Fort *Chartres* to see the ceremony which is performed by the French on that solemn day; the fort was only a league from the Indian village.

Every thing being in readiness for the attack, the general of the *Foxes* ordered ten or twelve of the best runners to throw away their bodies †. These young men immediately fell upon the enemy's village and killed all they met as they came in, crying the cry of death, and having discharged their arms, they fled with as much quickness as they came.

The *Illinois* took up their arms and pursued them; but the army of the *Foxes*, lying on the ground,

---

\* This is a great holiday with the French.

† To *throw away* their bodies, is among the Indians to *expose* their bodies to danger, as those do that are obliged to mount first of all the breach to storm a place.

ground, in the high grass, discharged all their arms and killed twenty-eight *Illinois*: at the same time they fell upon the village, and killed men, women and children; set fire to the village, and bound and led away the rest as captives.

The *Foxes* lost but four men in this glorious expedition, one of them being a chief with a medal\*, of the nation of *Soux*, who went with them as an ally.

I was a spectator of this slaughter, which happened on the sixth of June 1752. I was at that time on a hill which overlooks the plain and the village of the *Mitchigamias*. I had the opportunity of saving the life of a girl of fifteen years of age, who came to bring me some straw-berries. At the time of the attack, she ran away, and as the enemies pursued her, she ran into my arms, where the barbarians did not venture to shoot at her, for fear of hitting me.

K 3

This

---

\* This distinction, of which I have already spoken, is granted by order of the King, through his general, to the most valiant Indians, and who are most attached to the French nation.

This account will inform you, that nothing can be more dangerous, than being taken unawares by these nations. None but those, who were gone out of curiosity to see the procession at the French fort of *Chartres*, escaped the revenge of the *Foxes*, who contented with their victory, re-embarked in their boats, and put the prisoners well bound in the van; and passing by the French fort of *Koakias*, they gave a general salute with their guns.

The chief, or admiral of the *Foxes*, had hoisted the French colours on his canoe, and was as proud of his victory, as if he had subdued a great empire.

M. *de Macarty*, our governor, has written to those in the posts of Canada, to treat with the *Foxes* concerning the ransom of the *Illinois*, whom they have taken prisoners.

These cunning Indians had conducted their undertaking so well, that we knew nothing of it till it was executed; they hid the knowledge of it from us, justly fearing that we should interpose our mediation between them and the *Illinois*, as being the friends and allies of both; but the  
offended

offended nation was desirous of vengeance only.

The village of the *Mitchigamias* has lost about eighty persons, both killed and prisoners, in this fatal affair.

On the sixteenth of *June*, I was ordered by the commandant of Fort *Chartres*, to assemble the remains of the conquered tribes of *Kdakis* and *Mitchigamias*, and I held this short speech to them, by means of the King's interpreter.

I speak to you, my children \*, on the part of your father, *M. de Macarty*, who takes a great share in your misfortune, at the same time he exhorts you to take care in sowing your maize, that you may escape the want in which you are at present. Here is some maize, which he gives you, because his heart suffers to see you weakened by hunger. He has likewise told me to give this little quantity of powder, shot and flints; we cannot do better at present, because we have our enemies as well as you, and we do not know when the boats will come from the great village (i. e. *New Orleans*) Your father

K 4

recom-

---

\* The Indians are used to call every officer, *my father*.



recommends it to you to go hunting, and to take your families with you, that they may have somewhat to live upon, leaving only a certain number of men, to take care of the fields, and to prevent the wild beasts from ruining them; you must likewise take care to send one of your people from time to time, to inquire how matters stand here.

*The Answer of the Chiefs of the Tribes.*

“ It is very well, my Father, that the great chief \*  
 “ pities us. It was a very brave action to be sur-  
 “ prized in the manner we have been; thou hast been  
 “ an eye-witness of it, for thou hast saved the life  
 “ of one of our girls; our tribe have been killed  
 “ by the *Foxes*, who have burnt our huts with our  
 “ victuals, and taken our booty, during our re-  
 “ treat at the *Kaskgkias*. Thou must think, that  
 “ we cannot leave any here, or they must starve,  
 “ and would ever lament the death of our rela-  
 “ tions, who perished in this sad action, But to  
 “ convince our father of our fidelity, tell him,  
 “ by means of the speaking substance (paper),  
 “ that from time to time we shall send some one  
 “ of

---

\* Thus these nations call the superior officers of a province or district.

“ of our people to him with game to know what  
 “ happens here.

“ We hope the grand chief of the French  
 “ will protect and help us to shelter ourselves a-  
 “ gainst the enemy. We beg thee likewise to make  
 “ interest with him that he may be so good as to  
 “ send word to several families of our people,  
 “ who stayed among the *Kaskakias*, to join us,  
 “ in order to assist us in the common defence of  
 “ the intended fort, of which we have drawn  
 “ the plan on the shore of the *Mississippi*.”

*Speech of Chikagou, a Chief with a Medal:*

“ I beg, my father, that thou wouldst get our  
 “ arms mended, and we shall decamp after that  
 “ immediately: and that thou wilt tell the grand  
 “ chief not to hear the bad words, which our  
 “ enemies will not fail to throw out against our  
 “ nation, let him remember the promise I made  
 “ him, it shall be a true one; and I preserve his  
 “ words in my heart.”

*Answer.*

If what thou sayest be true, thy father will  
 receive thee well, and all the other chiefs will  
 endeavour

endeavour to please thee, if thy heart agree with thy tongue. It is necessary thou shouldst set out soon: consider the damage which the dogs of thy village have done among the cattle belonging to the French inhabitants \*, and with what tranquility they suffer it; that they have hitherto said nothing about it; is in consideration of your misfortunes, which grieve them, and they cannot see you reduced to this sad condition without being moved at it: but they begin to be tired, therefore you must remedy it. Your father will be satisfied when he knows that you are gone to the hunting country, because his heart is afflicted to see you suffer hunger, and he pities his children.

As to myself, I heartily wish you good success in hunting, and a plentiful crop at your return. I hope the *Great Spirit* will have pity upon you; do not flight him: recommend it to your young people not to play the fool, that is, not to destroy the female beavers in the lakes

---

\* The Indians have many dogs for hunting; and they themselves having lost their provisions, their dogs were hungry, and devoured the cattle of the French. The Indian dogs are of a breed which partakes of the wolf and the dog.

and hunting places of your enemies, who will not fail to be revenged for it; as you have unhappily experienced.

Your father has written to Mr. *Adamville*, who commands at the *Peorias*, to make your peace with the *Foxes*, and to treat with them about the ransom of your wives and children, whom they have taken prisoners; the merchandizes shall be furnished for that purpose for the account of the king, your father, grand chief of the white men and of the red men.

Among the Indians, those who run away or desert in an action, where their honour, and the defence of their country is at stake, are not punished; but they are considered as the disgrace of human nature. The others are continually reproaching them, that they are not men, but old women; they are despised by the very women, and the ugliest girls will not accept of them for husbands, and if ever it happened that a girl should be willing to marry a coward, her relations would not allow of it, for fear of having men without courage, and useless to their country in their family. These men are obliged to let their hair grow, and to wear an *alkonan*,  
like

like the women \*. I saw one of them, who being ashamed of his figure, went by himself to fight the *Tchikachas*, who are our enemies and theirs. He came near them, creeping like a snake, and hiding himself in the great grass during three or four days, without eating or drinking. As the English bring goods to the *Tchikachas* (Chickaws) in caravans, our *Illinois* killed one of them who had strayed from the caravan, cut off his head, mounted his horse, and got off. He was out three months upon this fine expedition. On his return the nation received him with due honour, and gave him a wife, that he might beget warriors. Before his departure he eat of dog's flesh, conformably to the opinion current among his people, and of which I have already had the honour of speaking to you.

The grand chief of the *Illinois* is descended from the family of the *Tamaroas*, who were formerly sovereigns of this country. This Cacique or Indian king, is the son of him that went to France with his attendants in 1720. He was presented to the King, who gave him a medal with his portrait, which the son now wears on his

---

\* A short petticoat, which the Indian women make use of, to cover their nakedness.

his breast. There was likewise a woman of the nation of the *Missouris*, who was called the princess of the *Missouris* \*. The *Sieur Dubois*, a sergeant, and interpreter of those American ambassadors, having been created an officer by the King, married this *Missourian* lady at his return. She became a widow; and afterwards married the *Sieur Marin*, a captain of the militia, by whom she had a daughter, who is still alive.

The Indian princess described to her countrymen the magnificence she had seen at the court of France, where she had been well received, and loaded with presents; she had, amongst other things, got a fine repeating watch set with diamonds, which the savages called a spirit, on account of its motion, which seemed supernatural to them.

I have here spoken with an old Indian, who was in the retinue of the Prince *Tamaraos*; I asked him several questions concerning France, and

---

\* She was the daughter of the grand chief of this nation. It is said she was *M. de Bourmont's* mistress, who, during his command among the *Missouris*, never ceased to praise and extol the wonders of France, and by that means engaged several to follow him: this girl went over to the Christian religion, and was baptised at the church of *Notre Dame*.

and especially what fine sights he had seen at *Paris*: he answered, that it was the *Rue de Boucherries*, (the shambles) because there was a great abundance of flestr; and after that the *Rue St. Honoré*. When he told his countrymen that he had seen the opera, and that all the people there are jugglers or forcerers; and that he likewise saw, upon the *Pont-Neuf*, some little men who danced and fung \*, they would not believe him. When he said, that, in the great village of the French (*Paris*), he had seen as many people as there are leaves on the trees in their forests, (an hyperbole which the Indians make use of to express a great number, having no words to express a number above a hundred), they answered, that the Europeans probably had fascinated his eyes, that it was impossible, and that they had always offered the same objects to his eyes. He said that he had seen the huts of the grand chief of the French, *i. e. Versailles* and *Louvre*, and that they contained more people than there are in their country: he likewise added, that he had seen the hut of the old warriors, (the royal hospital of invalids). As this old Indian began already to doat, he agreed with the other Indians, that the French had bewitched him. Another

*Illinois,*

---

\* A puppet-show.

*Illinois*, who had made the same voyage, told his countrymen, that, in the *Thuilleries*, and other public walks, he had seen men who were half women, having their hair dressed like women, wearing the same earrings, and great nose-gays on their breast; that he suspected they put *rouge* on their faces, and that he found they smelled like crocodiles\*.

This Indian spoke with the greatest contempt of that race of mortals, whom we know under the name of *petits-maitres*, or beaux, who are born with the weakness and the delicacy peculiar to women; nature seeming to have begun making them such, and afterwards to make a mistake in the formation of their sex.

The Indian had likewise remarked the enormous height of the head-dresses of our women in that time †, and of the heels of their shoes. But what would he have said, if he had seen the extravagant width of their hoops, and their fine  
 shape

---

\* The crocodile in the *Mississippi* has follicles with musk, which smells stronger than the East Indian musk; its effluvia are so strong, that you can often smell the animal before you see it.

† During the regency.



shape forced, from their infancy, into that elegant curials called stays. These coquets are not less ridiculous by their artifices, than their silly adorers. You have made the observation, as I have done, in the course of your travels through Europe, that the foreigners and country gentlemen, who come to *Paris* to copy our beaux and our belles, have rendered themselves insupportable to their countrymen by this unnatural method of acting: indeed, said our American, such effeminate manners dishonour a respectable nation.

I have received a letter from the Marquis de *Vaudreuil*, in which he expresses great concern for the unhappy accident which has befallen me, by the wreck of my boat. This governor, from a pure effect of his generosity, which is natural to him, has been willing to alleviate, as much as is in his power, the fate of an unhappy officer, who lost all he had in the King's service.

He has given me leave to come to *New Orleans*, and offered me his purse and his table; I am afraid he will be gone for France by the time I arrive at *New Orleans*. It may be said with truth, that he has deserved the esteem and friendship of every body. The Indians incessantly com-

compare him now to *M. de Bienville*, his predecessor. When these people do not speak in praise of a governor, but, on the contrary, agree with all the inhabitants in detesting him, it is the strongest accusation against him.

Before I conclude, I shall add a word about the *Missouris*. Baron *Pornauf*, who has been governor of *Fort Orleans* established in that nation, and who knows their genius perfectly well, has informed me, that they were formerly very warlike and good, but that the French hunters had corrupted them, by their bad conduct, and by some divisions among them; they had made themselves contemptible by frauds in trade; they seduced and carried off the Indian women, which, among these people, is a very great crime; for they never pardon such sorts of robberies. All the irregularities of these bad Frenchmen irritated the *Missouris* against them; and therefore, during *M. de Bienville's* government, they massacred the *Sieur Dubois*, and the little garrison under his command; and as no soldier escaped, we have never been able to know who was right and who was wrong.

The story I shall tell you will convince you, that these people are only nominally savages, and

Vol. I.

L

that

that the French, who endeavoured to impose upon them, have deceived themselves. About forty years ago, when these Americans did not yet know the Europeans, a traveller or hunter penetrated into their country, made them acquainted with fire-arms, and sold them muskets and gunpowder: they went out a-hunting, and got great plenty of game, and of course many furs. Another traveller went thither some time after, with ammunitions; but the Indians being still provided, they did not care to barter with the Frenchman, who invented a very odd trick, in order to sell his powder, without much troubling his head with the consequences that might result from his imposture to his countrymen. He thought he had done a great action in deceiving these poor people.

As the Indians are naturally curious, they were desirous of knowing how powder, which they called *grain*, was made in France. The traveller made them believe, that it was sown in *savannahs*, and that they had crops of it as of indigo or millet in *America*.

The *Missouris* were pleased with this discovery, and sowed all the gun-powder they had left, which obliged them to buy that of the Frenchman,

man, who got a considerable quantity of beaver-skins, otter-skins, &c. for it, and afterwards went down the river to the *Illinois*, where *M. de Tonti* commanded.

The *Missouris* went from time to time to the *Savannah*, to see if the powder was growing: they had placed a guard there, to hinder the wild beasts from spoiling the field; but they soon found out the Frenchman's trick: It must be observed, that the Indians can be deceived but once, and that they always remember it; accordingly these were resolved to be revenged upon the first Frenchman that should come to them. Soon after, the hopes of profit excited the traveller to send his partner to the *Missouris*, with goods proper for their commerce; they soon found out, that this Frenchman was associated with the man who had imposed upon them; however, they dissembled the trick which his predecessor had played. They gave him the public hut, which was in the middle of the village, to deposit his bales in; and when they were all laid out to view, the *Missouris* came in confusedly, and all those who had been foolish enough to sow gun-powder, took away some goods; so the poor Frenchman was rid of all his bales at once, but without any equivalent

from the Indians. He complained much of these proceedings, and laid his grievances before the great chief, who answered him very gravely: That he should have justice done him, but that for that purpose he must wait for the gun-powder harvest, his subjects having sown that commodity by the advice of his countryman; that he might believe upon the word of a sovereign, that, after that harvest was over, he would order a general hunt, and that all the skins of the wild beasts which should be taken, should be given in return for the important secret, which the other Frenchman had taught them.

Our traveller alledged, that the ground of the *Missouris* was not fit for producing gun-powder, and that his subjects had not taken notice, that France was the only country where it succeeded in. All his reasoning was useless; he returned much lighter than he came, and ashamed of having been corrected by savage men.

This lesson did not prevent others from going to the *Missouris*; one of them intended to play a good trick there; he got ready a piragua, which he loaded with trifles; and, being informed of the preceding adventure, he filled a little cask with  
with

with ashes and pounded charcoal, at the top of which he put some gun-powder. When he arrived, he put all his goods in the great hut, in order to tempt the *Missouris* to rob him; it happened as he expected. The Frenchman made a great noise, gave the Indians abusive language, and, running to the cask of gun-powder, he opened it, took a burning match, and cried out, I have lost my wits, I will blow up the hut, and you shall come with me to the country of the spirits. The Indians were frightened, and knew not what to do; the other Frenchmen who came with him were out of doors, and cried out, our brother has lost his senses, and he *will* not recover them again, till he gets his goods back, or till he gets paid for them. The chiefs went through the village, to exhort the people to pay; those who had any relations in the hut joined them; the people were moved, and every one brought all the furs he had into the hut; the Frenchman then said he had found his senses again. The chief presented him with the calumet, he smoked, and poured water upon the gun-powder to make it useless, or rather to hide his fraud from the Indians. He brought home fine furs to the value of a thousand crowns. The Indians have ever

since held him in great esteem, giving him the name of a *true man, or man of courage.*

I shall finish my letter with the description of a very odd and extraordinary ceremony, performed by the *Missouris*, who came hither as ambassadors, at the time when the *Chevalier de Boisbriant* commanded here. This tragic story will at the same time serve to teach officers, who, through a noble ambition, aspire to military commands, that both the theoretical and the practical part of geography ought absolutely to be understood by them; and that it is necessary they should carefully study the interior situation of a country where they are at war, in order to avoid all surprizes of the enemy, and to preserve the lives of the men who are under their care. What I shall now tell, will sufficiently convince them of this necessity.

Spain saw, with great displeasure, during the regency, our settlements on the *Mississippi*: The English too, on their side, spared no intrigues to ruin this growing colony, as they do still in regard to those upon the banks of the river *Ohio*, which they say belongs to them; and they have likewise laid claim to the *Mississippi*.

In

In 1720, the Spaniards formed the design of settling at the *Missouris*, who are near the *Illinois*, in order to confine us more to the westward; the *Missouris* are far distant from *New Mexico*, which is the most northerly province the Spaniards have.

They believed, that in order to put their colony in safety, it was necessary they should entirely destroy the *Missouris*; but concluding that it would be impossible to subdue them with their own forces alone, they resolved to make an alliance with the *Osages*, a people who were the neighbours of the *Missouris*, and at the same time their mortal enemies, hoping with their assistance, to surprize and destroy their enemies. With that view they formed a caravan at *Santa-Fé*, consisting of men, women, and soldiers, having a *Jacobine* priest for their chaplain, and an engineer-captain for their chief and conductor, with the horses and cattle necessary for a permanent settlement.

The caravan being set out, mistook its road, and arrived at the *Missouris*, taking them to be the *Osages*. Immediately the conductor of the caravan orders his interpreter to speak to the chief of the *Missouris*, as if he had been that of



the *Ojages*, and tell him that they were come to make an alliance with him, in order to destroy together the *Missouris* their enemies.

The great chief of the *Missouris* concealed his thoughts upon this expedition, shewed the Spaniards signs of great joy, and promised to execute a design with them which gave him much pleasure. To that purpose he invited them to rest for a few days after their tiresome journey; till he had assembled his warriors, and held council with the old men: but the result of this council of war was, that they should entertain their guests very well, and affect the sincerest friendship for them.

They agreed together to set out in three days. The Spanish captain immediately distributed fifteen hundred muskets amongst them, with an equal number of pistols, sabres, and hatchets; but the very morning after this agreement, the *Missouris* came, by break of day, into the Spanish camp, and killed them all except the *Jacobine* priest, whose singular dress did not seem to belong to a warrior: they called him a *mag-pie*, and diverted themselves with making him ride on one of the Spanish horses, on their days of assembly.

The

The priest, though he was caressed and well fed, was not without uneasiness, fearing that these jokes would end in sacrificing him to the *Manitou*, or deity of the Indians; therefore, one day, taking advantage of their confidence in him, he took his measures to get away before their faces. All those transactions the *Missouris* themselves have related, when they brought the ornaments of the chapel hither. They were dressed out in these ornaments: the chief had on the naked skin the chasuble, with the pates suspended from his neck, having driven a nail through it, and making use of it as a breast-plate; he marched gravely at the head of all the others, being crowned with feathers and a pair of horns. Those that followed him had more chasubles on; after them came those who carried the stole, followed by those who had the scarfs about their necks; after them came three or four young Indians, some with albs, and others with surplices on. The Acolothists, contrary to order, were at the end of this procession, not being adorned enough, and held in their hands a cross or chandelier, whilst they danced in cadence. These people, not knowing the respect due to the sacred utensils, hung the chalice to a horse's neck, as if it had been a bell.

Represent

Represent to yourself the ridiculous sight which the singular order of this procession must offer to the eye, as they arrived before the house of *M. de Boisbriant* the King's lieutenant, marching in cadence, and with the great calumet of peace displayed according to custom.

The first Frenchman who saw this masquerade arrive, ran laughing to give *M. de Boisbriant* intelligence of it; this officer, who is as pious as he is brave, was overcome with grief at the sight of the Indians, and knew not what to think of the event; he feared they had destroyed some French settlement; but when he saw them near by, his sadness vanished, and he had much to do to keep himself from laughing with the rest.

The *Missouris* told him, that the Spaniards intended to have destroyed them; that they brought him all these things, as being of no use to them, and that, if he would, he might give them such goods in return as were more to their liking. Accordingly he gave them some goods, and sent the ornaments to *M. de Bienville*, who was then governor-general of the province of *Louisiana*.

As

As the Indians had got a great number of Spanish horses from this caravan, the chief of the *Missouris* gave the finest to M. de Boisbriant.

They had likewise brought with them the map which had conducted the Spaniards so ill, who came to surrender themselves, by confessing their intention to their enemies.

I shall profit of the permission which I have obtained to go down to *New Orleans*. If I find our general, and a letter from you there, it will be a double pleasure to me.

I am, S I R, &c.

*At the Illinois, the 15th  
of May 1753.*

LET-




## L E T T E R VIII.

*To the same.*

*The Author leaves the Country of the Illinois, and goes to New Orleans. Arrival of Monsieur de Kerlerec. Departure of the Marquis de Vaudreuil. The Author's second Voyage to the Illinois. Heroic Action of a Father, who sacrificed himself for his Son.*

S I R,


 N June I arrived at the Capital of Louisiana, where I found a letter from you, which gave me real pleasure, by informing me that you continue to enjoy your health, and it made up for the loss I had of our dear governor's presence; when I came hither I heard he was already gone to France; and to compleat my misfortunes, Mr. *Michel de la Ruevilliero* was dead of an apoplexy; he had  
 wrote

wrote to me that he had with sorrow heard of the loss of my boat, and that notwithstanding it was not the king's custom to re-imburse such expences, yet he would repair this loss with pleasure for my relief: that I should make an exact account of all I had lost, and join to it a certificate from *M. de Macarty*, the commander of the convoy: this was, he said, an indispensable necessity, that this article may at least have some appearance, and thus be entered in the accounts; he promised that as soon as he should have this paper, he would settle what I was to receive. The Marquis de *Vaudreuil* had recommended me at his departure to his successor *M. de Kerlerec*, who has not paid any attention to his recommendation; his qualities are quite the reverse of those of his predecessor; but this new governor alleges, that he is not come so far, merely for the sake of changing the air. He kept me at *New Orleans*, and only allowed me to rejoin my garrison in 1754, with the convoy which *M. de Faverot* commanded. I could not find any room to embark my provisions for the voyage, on account of the number of goods every one was allowed to take as a venture, and which filled the king's boats: I made my just representations on this subject to *M. de Kerlerec*, who made me suffer all kinds of disagreeable circumstances

stances on this occasion. After which, having asked me what venture I took with me, I answered, that I understood nothing of commerce; that being a soldier, his majesty had sent me to *Louisiana* to serve him, and that I placed all my glory in that service, at last *M. de Kerlerec* gave me leave to join my garrison.

I left *New Orleans* the seventeenth of August, but the boats, as I have already said, were so much laden with ventures, that being overtaken by the frost, we could not get to the *Illinois*, but were obliged to winter on the road; and the convoy only arrived in January, 1755, which occasioned extortions and immense costs for the king's account. The fatigue of so long a voyage ruined my health so much, that I was reduced to the utmost extremity. I was conducted on foot by Indians, and when I was tired, they carried me in a dressed ox hide, made in the form of a hammock, hung upon a great pole, as a litter. They changed successively, and in this manner I came once more to the old fort *Chartres*, where I lay in a hut, till I could get a lodging in the new fort, which is almost finished. It is built of free stone, flanked with four bastions, and capable of containing a garrison of three hundred men. I  
asked

asked M. *de Macarty*'s leave to go to change the air at the *Kaokias*, who are a day's journey from Fort *Chartres*, and the road to it is either by water or by land. In this post there is a little fort on the left side of the *Mississippi*, it is the great road of the *Illinois* to *Canada*, and the center of commerce of *New France*, or *Louisiana*, which is considerable in furs.

The priests of the order of St. *Sulpicius*, to whom the isle and town of *Montreal* belong, have established a mission here under the name of the *Holy Family of Jesus*. There are but three priests. I have been particularly acquainted with the *Abbé Mercier*, a Canadian by birth, and vicar of the whole country of *Illinois*. He was a man of probity, whose friendship could not fail of being of use to me, by the knowledge he had acquired of the manners of the Indians, who were edified by his virtue and disinterestedness. He spoke the language of the country, and on account of the fluency with which he expressed himself in it, he was highly esteemed among the Indians, who consult him in all matters. He has spent forty five years in cultivating the Lord's vineyard in these distant countries, and the Indian nations of these parts have



have always respected him. A man of his character could never have lived long enough for the happiness of these people. This worthy apostle of *Louisiana*, fell into a consumption in Lent, and he died of it one Friday at half an hour after eleven at night, expiring as a Christian hero. He had an admirable presence of mind, and I have regretted him very much. The French and the Indians were inconsolable; the latter sent their deputies according to their custom to lament him on his tomb. They came in swarms; and as soon as they arrived near the house of the late Abbé, they cried out aloud and made doleful lamentations. These poor people were in a great consternation, and grief was painted on their faces. These people, whom we call savages, know the true virtue in man; this man had worked almost during his whole life for their welfare; they called him their father and the chief of the prayer.

What a difference is there between this missionary and another anterior to him, who falsely attributed to himself the discovery of *Louisiana*; I mean the father *Hennepin*, a Recollet friar, of whom I shall speak to you. In 1683, he published a relation, the title of which is not right: for

For the country which the Recollet, and the Sieur *Decan* discovered in going up the *Mississippi* from the river of *Illinois* to the fall *St. Anthony*, does not belong to *Louisiana*, but to *Canada*. The relation of a second voyage of father *Hennepin*, in the *Recueil des Voyages du Nord*, bears a title which is equally false: voyage to a country greater than Europe, between the frozen ocean, and new *Mexico*; for though they have gone very far up the *Mississippi*, they have still been at a great distance from the frozen ocean. When the author published this second relation he had quarrelled with *M. de la Salle*; it seems that he was actually forbid returning to *America*, and that the displeasure this restriction gave him, prompted him to retire to Holland, where he published a third work, intitled a new description of a very great country, situated in *America* between new *Mexico* and the frozen ocean, with reflections on *M. de la Salle's* undertakings and other things concerning the description and history of *North America*.

The author there not only vents all his ill-nature on *M. de la Salle*, but likewise throws it upon *France*, pretending to have been ill-treated by the nation. He means to save his honour by declaring that he was born a subject of the Ca-

tholic king \*; but he ought to reflect that it was at the expence of France that he travelled in *America*, and that it was in the name of his most Christian majesty, that he and the *Sieur Decan* took possession of the countries which they had discovered. He did not fear to advance, that it was with the consent of his Catholic majesty, his first sovereign, that he dedicated his relation, to William the Third, king of Great Britain, in which he solicits that monarch to conquer these vast regions, and to send Missionaries thither, to teach the Indians the Christian religion; a proceeding which excited the ridicule of the Catholics, and scandalized the Protestants, who were surprized to see a priest who called himself a missionary, exhort a Protestant sovereign to found a Roman church in *America*. All his works are besides written in a pompous stile, which shocks the reader, and offends him by the liberties which the author takes, and by his indecent invectives. Father *Hennepin* thought he might make use of the privilege of a traveller; but he has likewise been much cried down by his fellow-travellers, who have often declared, that he was very unfaithful

---

\* Father Hennepin was a native of *Douay*.

faithful in all his accounts. It appears that there was more vanity in his undertaking, than true zeal in making profelytes in *America*.

Whilst I was at the *Keokias*, some Indians of the nation of *Osages* arrived there; their *Manison*, or false deity, was a dried serpent, of a monstrous size. These people said that this prodigious animal had committed great devastations in their country; that it swallowed a tyger-cat all at once; that consequently they had declared war against it, and were gone to attack it. They followed it by the track, but neither balls nor arrows could penetrate its body, which was covered with very hard scales, like those of a crocodile. They succeeded at last in putting it to death by shooting balls and arrows at it, which blinded it. He that had killed it carried the mark or impression of it on his body, in the same manner as the *Akanzas* imprinted the roe-buck on my thigh. They make this lasting mark in the following manner. They first draw with black, or with gun-powder the figure of the animal or object they mean to represent, on the flesh; after which they sting the skin in the out-line, with one or more needles to the blood; the figure is then slightly washed

over with a fine sponge dipt in a solution of rock salt, which mixes the blood with the black, contracting the skin which has been stung, and renders the figure indelible. This is not done without some pain; but as it is a kind of knighthood to which they are only intitled by great actions, they suffer with pleasure, in order to pass for men of courage. These marks of distinction multiply in proportion to the fine actions they do in war.

If one of them should get himself marked, without having previously distinguished himself in battle, he would be degraded, and looked upon as a coward, unworthy of an honour, which only belongs to those who generously expose their lives in defence of their country. The Indians only value the sons of Caciques, in as much as they are brave and virtuous after the example of their fathers and ancestors.

I saw an Indian, who, though he had never signalized himself in defence of the nation, however chose to get a mark on his body, in order to deceive those who only judged from appearances. He would pass for a man of courage with a view to obtain one of the prettiest girls of the nation in marriage, who, savage as she was,

was

was however not without ambition. As he was on the point of concluding the match with her relations, the warriors, full of indignation on seeing a coward boast with a mark due only to military merit, held an assembly of chiefs of war, in order to punish such audaciousness. The council agreed, that, to obviate such an abuse, which would confound brave men with cowards, he who had wrongfully adorned himself with the figure of a club on his skin, without ever having struck a blow at war, should have the mark torn off, that is, the place should be flayed, and that the same should be done to all who would offend in the same case.

As there was no pardon to hope for, his condemnation being pronounced by an act of this Indian senate, who is jealous of maintaining the honour of the nation, I offered, in commiseration of the poor wretch, to cure him in the French manner; I said I would take off the skin and the mark without hurting him, and that my remedy would change the blood into water. The Indians, ignorant of my secret, believed I jest-  
ed with them: therefore, counterfeiting their jugglers, I gave the pretended bravo a calabash full of syrup of the maple-tree, into which I had put a dose of opium; and, whilst he was asleep,

I applied Spanish flies to the figure of the club which he bore on his breast, and over them some plantain leaves, which caused tumours; the skin and the mark went off, and a watery matter came out. This method of proceeding surprised the Indian jugglers, who were ignorant of the Spanish flies, or Cantharides, which are very common in *North America*. They give a light in night-time; and even the smallest types can be read, by holding the insect near to the letters, and following the lines.

There is often a similarity in the manners of the Indians and of the Europeans, though they may appear ever so different amongst themselves. The following example is a proof of it. An officer belonging to the regiment of the *Isle de France*, having fallen in love with a young lady at *Paris* in 1749, the mother of the lady told him, that she would willingly give him her daughter, provided he was adorned with the cross of *St. Louis*. In order to accelerate his marriage, love inspired him with the thought of taking that distinction from himself, which the King alone can give away. The lady already looked upon him as her son-in-law; but a few days after, the false chevalier is met by an officer of his regiment, who, being before him in the service, is surprised

surprised to see him obtain the cross before himself. The new chevalier told him, that, with protections, one could get at every thing. The officer, who knew nothing of the other's views, goes immediately to *M. d'Argenson*, and represents to him the injustice done to him, by giving the order of St. Louis to his junior officer. The minister denies it, and sends for the list of promotions, in which the officer is not comprised: accordingly he is taken up, and brought before the tribunal of the Marshals of France. A court was held at the hospital of invalids, wherein Marshal *Belle-isle* presided. The false chevalier was sentenced to have the cross taken from him, to be degraded, and to be confined in a fortress during twenty years.

The Indian women are allowed to make marks all over their body, without any bad consequences; I have seen some of them who had marks even on their breasts, though that part be extremely delicate; but they endure it firmly, like the men, in order to please them, and to appear handsomer to them,

To return to the *Manitou* of the *Osages*, I wished to have this pretended relic in my possession, in order to adorn your collection of natural



tural curiosities with it; I was willing to treat about it with the Indian priest who served it, offering him European goods in return, and representing to him that the adoration of this animal was an abuse; that he ought, as we do, to worship the *Great Spirit*, or *Author of Nature*; but this cunning priest of the devil, in owning that his superstitious countrymen adored every thing uncommon, told me, that he expected to make a great profit of his *Manitou*; that, being a physician, and a juggler besides, he could easily make them believe that his deity eat with the evil spirit at night, and that they must bring him victuals into his hut, and fine furs to dress him out.

Thus this impostor, by his artful discourses, gives weight to the errors and prejudices of these ignorant people. These fellows make them believe, that they converse with the devil at night, whom the Indians are much afraid of, because he can only do harm; whereas they say the *Great Spirit*, being good, can do them no hurt.

I shall finish my letter by an account of the tragic death of an Indian of the nation of *Collapissas*, who sacrificed himself for his son; I have

advised

admired this heroic deed, which raises human generosity to the highest pitch.

A *Chattaw*, speaking very ill of the French, said, that the *Collapissas* were their *dogs*, i. e. their slaves; one of these, vexed at such abusive language, killed the *Chattaw* with his gun. The nation of *Chattaws*, which is the greatest and most numerous on this continent, armed immediately, and sent deputies to *New Orleans* to ask from the governor the head of the murderer, who had put himself under the protection of the French. They offered presents to make up the quarrel, but the cruel nation of *Chattaws* would not accept any; they even threatened to destroy the village of *Collapissas*. To prevent the effusion of blood, the poor unhappy Indian was delivered up to them. The *Sieur Ferrand*, commander of the German settlement on the right shore of the *Mississippi*, was charged with this commission. The rendez-vous for this purpose was given between the village *Collapissa* and the settlement of the Germans; and the sacrifice was performed there as follows:

The Indian was called *Tichou Mingo*, i. e. Cacique's servant. He stood upright, and held a speech, according to the custom of the people, saying,

saying, " I am a true man, that is, I do not  
 " fear death ; but I pity the fate of a wife and  
 " four children, whom I leave behind me very  
 " young, and of my father and mother, who  
 " are old, and for whom I got subsistence by  
 " hunting \*. I recommend them to the French,  
 " because I die for having taken their part."

He had hardly spoken the last word of this  
 short and pathetic speech, when his good and  
 tender father, penetrated with his son's filial  
 love, got up, and spoke to the following effect:  
 " It is through courage † that my son dies ; but  
 " being young, and full of vigour, he is more  
 " fit than myself to provide for his mother, wife,  
 " and four little children ; it is therefore neces-  
 " sary he should stay on earth to take care of  
 " them. As to myself, I am near the end of my  
 " career, I have lived long enough, and I wish my  
 " son may come to the same age, in order to  
 " educate my little children. I am no longer fit  
 " for any thing, some years of life more or  
 " less are indifferent to me. I have lived as a  
 " man,

---

\* He was the best hunter in the nation.

† Courage is a word which, in their language, signifies something great or extraordinary.

"man, and will die as such; therefore I go to  
"take his place?"

At these words, which expressed paternal affection in a very strong and moving manner, his wife, his son, his daughter-in-law, and their little children, shed tears round the brave old man; he embraced them for the last time, and exhorted them to be faithful to the French, and to die rather than to betray them by any means unworthy of his blood: at last he told them, that his death was a necessary sacrifice to the nation, which he was contented and proud to make. With these words he presented his head to the relations of the dead *Challaw*, and they accepted it: after that he laid himself on the trunk of a tree, and they cut off his head immediately with one stroke of a hatchet.

Every thing was made up by this death; but the young man was obliged to give them his father's head †; in taking it up, he said to it,  
" Pardon

\* These nations follow the *lex talionis*, death is avenged by death; and it is sufficient to substitute any one of the nation, if even he were not a relation of the criminal; slaves only are excepted.

† They put it on a pole, and carried it as a trophy into their tribe.

“ Pardon me thy death, and remember me in the country of spirits.” All the French who assisted at this tragic event were moved to tears, and admired the heroic constancy of this venerable old man, whose virtue is equal to that celebrated Roman orator, who, in the time of the triumvirate, was hidden by his son. The latter was cruelly tormented, in order to extort from him the place where his father was concealed, who, being no longer able to bear that so tender and so virtuous a son should suffer so much, came to present himself to the murderers, and begged the soldiers to kill him, and to save his son’s life; the son conjured them to kill him, but to spare his father; the soldiers, more barbarous than the savage Indians, killed them both together, at the same time, and in the same place.

M. Ferrand, my fellow-traveller in my last voyage to the *Illinois*, fell into the *Mississippi* in the severest season, whilst his soldiers were exercising; and, at the very moment that the rapidity of this river carried him into an abyss, an *Akanza* hunter, who was happily on board his boat, saved him from the precipice. The officer told him, that he hoped to recompense him generously for this piece of service; but the Indian

dian immediately answered, that he had only done the duty of a brother, who ought to succour the unhappy in time of danger; that, as the *Great Spirit* had taught him to swim like a fish, he could not employ his skill better than to save the life of his fellow-creature.

All the Indians, both men and women, learn to swim from their infancy. I have often seen the mothers put their little children into pools of fresh water, and I took great delight in seeing the little creatures swim naturally. Would not such an education be better than those methods which people are so fond of in Europe? The question I speak of here is of the utmost consequence, especially in a country where almost everybody goes by water, and on sea-voyages. I shall not enter into these details, which might prove tiresome: I shall only say, that, according to sound reason, the first thing which it is necessary to know in nature, is how to preserve one's existence; and that it is to be wished, that the European mothers would imitate the Americans in that particular, and likewise in suckling their own children. This action, which is dictated by nature, would prevent many accidents with regard to children supposed to be legitimate; and, without quoting many facts  
to

to this purpose from the *Causés Celestes*, I have a recent example before my eyes of the confusion often caused in families by those mercenary nurses. A gentleman, who was an officer of the same detachment which I was in, had long been supposed to be lost by his nurse. As soon as he was born, he was sent down into the midst of *Normandy*; and his relations have only found him out, when he was twenty-two years old; through mere chance, after he had gone through a series of miseries and dangers during that time.

I remember, that, in 1749, upon the road between *Paris* and *Arpajan*, I was witness of an accident which happened to one of the little victims which parents put from them, in order not to be importuned by their cries. The nurse who was trusted with this child, had put it in her apron; as she was stepping into one of those carriages destined for these journies, her apron, which was tied behind, got untied, and the child fell upon the pavement, and expired.

Give me leave to say, that there is an entire difference between the way of thinking of the European and the Indian women. The latter would think themselves abused, if they were to leave

leave their children to the care of a woman far from their own inspection; they are not afraid, as some European women, that their husband's tenderness will diminish, because they have borne the tokens of their mutual affection; on the contrary, the flame increases on both parts, and the pleasure of seeing their race perpetuated, and to see another self grow up in a little creature which they brought into the world, amply repays the trouble they have of supporting them.

The white women, whom we call *Creoles*, follow in *America* the European custom, disdaining to suckle their own children; they give them, as soon as they are born, to a tawny or red slave, without reflecting, that her blood may be corrupted. Many able physicians have demonstrated, that the milk has an influence on the inclinations of the children. I have often seen many an innocent fall a victim to the irregular life of their nurses in *America*; which is a circumstance fatal to the propagation of the human species. I leave this subject to the gentlemen of the faculty, who will certainly handle it better than myself.

I conclude, by assuring you that I am, &c.

P. S. An



P. 8. An Indian courier has just brought us the agreeable news of the taking of *Choaguen*; and the places dependent on it; upon the famous lake *Ontario*.

The garrison of that place, to the number of fifteen hundred regular troops, have surrendered prisoners of war; and have accepted the articles of capitulation which *M. de Montcalm* has granted them; that general immediately sent the five pair of regimental colours which he found in the place to *Quebec*.

*M. Rigaud*\*, the governor of *Trois Rivières*, commanded the Canadians and Indians; he had taken possession of an advantageous post, in order to oppose all succours, and cut off the retreat of the enemy.

The land troops, those of the colonies, the Canadians, and the Indians, have all equally distinguished themselves: we know not yet the number of men which the enemies have lost; all we have heard is, that their general was killed  
at

---

\* Brother of the Marquis of *Vaudreuil*, who returned into *America* with the title of Governor-General of *Canada* and *New France*.

at the beginning of the attack: we, on our side, have lost but three soldiers. *M. de Bourlamaque*, a colonel of foot, has been slightly wounded, together with seven or eight Canadians; but unhappily *M. Decombe*, the engineer, was shot by one of our own Indians, who took him for an Englishman, on account of his uniform, which was different from that of the other French officers.

The *Marquis de Montcalm* is now employed in destroying the forts of *Choagueu*, and in sending the provisions and ammunition, and a hundred pieces of cannon which have been found there, to *Frontenac*.

*At the Illinois, the 21st  
of July 1756.*



## L E T T E R IX.

*To the same.*

*The Author sets out from the Koakias for Fort Chartres. His Observations on the Population. Account of a Caravan of Elephants arrived in the Neighbourhood of the Ohio.*

S I R,

According to all appearances, this is the  
 A last letter I shall write to you from the  
 Illinois; I prepare to set out by order  
 of the physicians, who have judged it necessary  
 that I should return to France, to use the baths  
 of *Bourbon*, in order to prevent the bad conse-  
 quences of a shot I received, many years ago, at  
 the assault of *Chateau Dauphin* \*.

Yester-

---

\* This is a fort in Piedmont, at the top of a mountain of the

Yesterday an exprefs arrived here from Fort *du Quêne* to our commander, who informs us, that the English make great preparations to come to attack that post again. *M. de Macarty* has sent provisions to victual the fort. The *Chevalier de Villiers* commands it in my stead, my bad state of health not allowing me to undertake that voyage; it would have enabled me to examine the place on the road, where an Indian found some elephant's teeth, of which he gave me a grinder, weighing about six pounds and a half.

In 1735, the Canadians who came to make war upon the *Tchicachas* (Chickaws) found, near the *sine river* or *Ohio*, the skeletons of seven elephants; which makes me believe, that *Louisiana* \* joins to Asia, and that these elephants came from the latter continent by the western part, which we are not acquainted

N 2

with :

---

the Alps. It was taken the 19th of July 1744, under the command of the Prince of Conti.

The brigade of Poitou, commanded by the brave *M. de Chevert*, distinguished itself in this action by an uncommon valour, which has been admired by all Europe.

\* The French set no bounds to the westward to Louisiana. F.

with: a herd of these animals having lost their way, probably entered the new continent, and having always gone on main land and in forests, the Indians of that time not having the use of fire arms, have not been able to destroy them entirely; it is possible that seven arrived at the place near the *Ohio*, which, in our map of *Louisiana*, is marked with a cross. The elephants, according to all appearance, were in a swampy ground, where they sunk in by the enormous weight of their bodies, and could not get out again, but were forced to stay there\*.

In 1752, the Baron *Pernouf*, who commanded Fort *François* in the country of the *Missouri*, received the skin of an animal from the Indians, which was hitherto unknown in *America*. That officer sent it to the *Marchionis de Vandevuil*, who made a muff of it: this creature was about twice as big as an European fox, and its hair as  
fine

---

\* It appears from modern geographical observations, that our author's supposition of a migration of elephants is improbable and it is further confirmed by the examination of the teeth of these animals, which are very different from those of the common elephant, and consequently they cannot be of the same species. See *Kalm's Travels*, vol. I. p. 135. *Philosoph. Transf.* vol. LVIII. and *Rennet's Synopsis of Quadrupeds*, p. 91. F.

fine and soft as velvet, mottled with black and pearly white.

Many authors pretend, that it is possible that people went through *Nova Zembla*, (situated northward of the ancient continent) over the ice to *Greenland*; they think, that this is the track on which those went who first peopled *America*, and that the freights which separate it from the continent, has high mountains of ice on its eastern shore: but all those who have tried to go to India through this northern part, have been eaten by white bears, or have perished amidst the ice.

This is my observation on the subject: if men did go through those parts to inhabit *North America*, they probably would have preferred *Canada*, *New England*, and *Louisiana*, the northern parts of which are analogous to their country; whereas it is known, that when the French and English discovered *North America*, there were but few inhabitants in it; but, on the contrary, the Spaniards who conquered *Peru* and *Mexico*, found kings and emperors, who set on foot great armies, and who annually sacrificed twenty thousand captives to their false deities. Therefore there is reason to believe, that men went from

the west to *Mexico* and *Loufiana* \*. The elephants who came thither are a proof which confirms my observations †. Further, when I asked the Indians called *Sioux des prairies*, who are a nomadic nation, they told me, that they had heard other Indians say, that, to the westward of their country, there lived a nation of clothed people, who navigated on great salt-water lakes with great piraguas ‡; that they inhabited great villages built with white stones; that the inhabitants obeyed one despotic grand chief, who sent great armies into the field.

The *Mexicans* adore idols as the Indians do; the *Natches* Indians had a temple, and a kind of service; in their language intelligent people have found Chinese words. Some Indians cut off their hair, leaving only a tuft as the crown  
of

---

\* *Loufiana* formerly touched *Canada* on the north-east, *Florida* and the *English colonies* on the east, and *New Mexico* on the west side. Its north-west boundaries were not determined. See more on this subject in a note to *Kalm's Travels*, vol. III. p. 125. F.

† But this proof does not hold good. See the note on p. 180.

‡ The Indians call the sea a great lake, and the ships great piraguas.

of a friar, to which they fasten feathers of various colours. They never cut their nails; and among the Chinese it is a mark of nobility to let the nails grow very long.

If we suppose that men went over from our continent to *America*, they would have kept their white colour, since we see, that, during two centuries and a half after *Columbus* discovered this new world, the Europeans who settled in it preserve their white complexion from generation to generation. The animals which have been found there are entirely different from ours, and neither *Pliny* nor any other old naturalist speak of them. We must be contented with admiring the works of the Creator, without desiring to dive into his mysteries\*.

---

N 4

I shall

---

\* This way of arguing is very strange, and greatly promotes barbarism. Man has got reason for the purpose, that truth should be the object of his enquiries; and if he should carry them no further, out of fear to dive too deep into the mysteries of the Creator, this would patronize ignorance and barbarism. Many a thing, which seemed too abstruse, has been discovered by an indefatigable application. The way in which America was peopled, and the manner in which the skeletons of great bulky animals approaching to the kind of elephants came to the river *Ohio*, are now a mystery, but may one day or other be discovered by a lucky accident, or a great and original genius. F.



I shall add here, by the way, that when the Spaniards discovered the isles of *St. Domingo* and *Cuba*, they found them well peopled with Indians, whom they murdered under pretence of a religious principle, but really in order to get their gold. Therefore a Cacique or petty king of the island, escaping from the Spaniards, gave his people to understand, that gold was the deity of their enemies, since they came so far, and exposed themselves to so many dangers, in order to get possession of it; and that it was necessary they should abandon every thing, in order to be left in quiet. Another Cacique being condemned to be burnt by the inquisition, was solicited by a Jesuit to become a Christian, in order to go to Paradise; but he openly declared he would not go there, if there were any Spaniards in it. These unhappy Indians abhorred the Spaniards so much, that they did not even converse with their wives for fear of begetting slaves to such masters: and whenever they eat of their flesh, it was more through revenge than any appetite; for they plainly said, that the flesh of a Spaniard was good for nothing.

I forgot to tell you in my last, that I have been invited to the feast of war, given by the grand chief of the *Illinois*, in order to raise warriors,

riors, and march with the Chevalier *Villiers*. This gentleman obtained leave from the governor to raise a party of French and Indians, and to go with them to avenge the death of his brother, *M. de Jumonville*, who was killed by the English before the war broke out.

The grand chief of the *Illinois* is called *Papapé-changouhias*; he is related to several Frenchmen of distinction, settled among these people. This Cacique succeeded Prince *Tamarou* surnamed *Chikagou*, who died in 1754. He wears the medal of the late Cacique: this *Illinois* prince has convinced the French, that he is worthy of wearing it, by his friendship for our nation. The detachment of the Chevalier *de Villiers* \* being ready to set out, *Papapé-changouhias*

---

\* The Chevalier *de Villiers*, who commanded this detachment, must not be confounded with *M. de Villiers*, called the *Great Villiers*, who went to avenge the death of *Jumonville* immediately after his murder in 1753. See the poem which the famous *M. Thomas* wrote on this subject.

Of the seven brothers who composed this family of *Villiers*, six were killed in Canada in defence of their country. The Chevalier *de Villiers* is the last; he was taken prisoner in the action at *Niagara* in 1759, being in the party of *M. Aubry*: this officer had defeated a body of English troops at *Fort de Duquesne*.

his desired to serve him as a guide with his warriors. They left Fort *Chartres* on the first of April 1756, and arrived, towards the end of May, on the boundaries of *Virginia*, where the English had a little fort surrounded with great pales. The Indians came near it in the night-time, each having a fascine of resinous combustible wood, which they set on fire close to the pales of the fort. The English commanding officer, appearing to give orders for putting out the fire, was aimed at by an Indian, who killed him on the spot. The same Indian called out in their language: "Surrender, you English dogs, or else you shall be burnt or eaten." The soldiers, intimidated by his threats, and being without a commander, surrendered at discretion the next morning; the Indians then bound them two by two, like captives, except the serjeant, whom one of the Indians found out to be the person who had beaten him with a stick in time of peace. The poor serjeant became the victim of the resentment of these barbarians, who burnt him without any mercy. I have already said, that the Indians never forgive, and that they think themselves free and independent: therefore one must take care not to strike them, for they revenge themselves sooner or later.

The

The English prisoners, to the number of forty, taken in the fort, were divided among the French and Indians, who stripped them according to their custom, plucked out their beards and hair, and, at the request of the French, they only made them slaves. But the French officers, and the humanest among the French inhabitants of the *Illinois*, joined together, and released them, by making a present to that nation who treated their prisoners like dogs, only because they were our enemies, and because they thought of making themselves great with us\*.

From the village of the *Koakias* we arrived at the *Peorias*, allies of the *Illinois*, through a fine large meadow, which is twenty-five leagues long. The savages who were with me, killed some little birds with sticks, and called them strawberry-bills. These birds, whose plumage is varied with many colours, are as good to eat as the *beccafigos* in Provence. The Indians told me, that they are birds of flight or of passage, and that they assemble in flocks every year like sparrows,

---

\* From a natural kind of antipathy between the two nations, the French take every opportunity to depress the English, and to raise themselves above them, sometimes at the expence of truth. F.

sparrows, to feed on the strawberries in this meadow, which is red all over with them in the season. The village of the *Peorias* is situated on the banks of a little river, and fortified after the American manner, that is surrounded with great pales and posts.

When we were arrived there, I enquired for the hut of the grand chief; they brought me to a great hut, where the whole nation was assembled, on account of a party of their warriors, who had been beaten by the *Foxes*, their mortal enemies.

I was well received by the Cacique and his first warriors, who came one after another to squeeze me by the hand in sign of friendship, saying, *hou, hou!* which signifies, *you are welcome*, or I am glad to see you. A young Indian or a slave, lighted the calumet of peace, and the chief gave it to me to smoke out of, according to the common custom.

After the first ceremonies were over, they brought me a calabash full of the vegetable juice of the maple tree. The Indians extract it in January, making a hole at the bottom of it, and apply a little tube to that. At the first thaw,  
they

they get a little barrel full of this juice, which they boil to a syrup : and being boiled over again, it changes into a reddish sugar, looking like *Cambrian manna*; the apothecaries justly prefer it to the sugar which is made of sugar canes. The French who are settled at the *Illinois* have learnt from the Indians to make this syrup, which is an exceeding good remedy for colds, and rheumatisms.

At the end of the session of this assembly, they brought a kind of bread which they call *Piakwin*, bears paws, and beavers tails; I likewise eat of the dog's flesh through complaisance, for I have made it a rule to conform occasionally to the genius of the people, with whom I am obliged to live, and to affect their manners, in order to gain their friendship: they likewise brought in a dish of boiled gruel, of maize flour, called *Sagamité*, sweetened with syrup of the maple tree; it is an Indian dish which is tolerably good and refreshing. At the end of the repast, they served a desert of a kind of dry fruits which our Frenchmen call *bauxs*, and which are as good as Corinth raisins; they are very common in the *Illinois* country.

The

The next day I saw a great croud in the plain : this assembly was for making a dance in favour of their new *Manitou* ; the priests were dressed in a remarkable manner : their bodies were covered with a clay in which they had made burlesque drawings, and their faces were painted red, blue, white, yellow, green and black. The high priest had a bonnet of feathers, like a crown on his head, and a pair of horns of a wild goat, \* to set the feathers off. I own the appearance of this prelate tempted me to laugh ; but as these ceremonies are serious, one must take care, not to burst out, because it would be reckoned a want of religion, and an indecent action amongst them : nor do the Indians ever interrupt the Roman Catholics, in the exercise of religion. But what a sight presented itself to my eyes ; I saw a living monster considered as a divinity : I was at the door of the temple of this false deity ; the master of the ceremonies begged me to go in ; I was not yet sufficiently acquainted with their customs, and shewed some reluctance, but one of the Indians who accompanied me, perceiving it, told me, that if I did not go in, the people would take it as an offence,

---

\* \* These animals are found at the *Misouris*, their horns are of a fine black, and bent backwards.

fence, or at least as a contempt. This discourse determined me and I went in \* : this is the picture of their *Manitou* ; his head hung upon his stomach, and looked like a goat's, his ears were like a lynx's ears, with the same kind of hair, his feet, hands, thighs and legs were in form like those of a man: this false divinity seemed to be about six months old, the Indians found it in the woods at the foot of a ridge of mountains, called the mountains of *Sainte Barbe*, which communicate to the rich mines of *Santa Fé* in *Mexico*. The general assembly was called together on purpose to invoke the protection of this monster against their enemies.

I let these poor people know, that their *Manitou* was an evil genius, as a proof of it, I added, that he had permitted the nation of *Foxes*, who were their most cruel enemies, to gain a victory over some of their countrymen ; that they ought to quit him as soon as possible,  
and

---

\* The master of the ceremonies, or priest, that is appointed to guard the temple, before he made his offerings, anointed his body with rosin ; he then strewed the soft feathers of a swan, or the hair of a beaver all over this melted gum, and in that ridiculous plight he danced in honour of the false deity.



and be revenged on him. They answered, *sika-labé, houé nigué*, i. e. we believe thee, thou art in the right. They then voted that he should be burnt, and the great priest pronounced his sentence, which, according to the interpreter's explanation, was conceived in these terms: "Mon-  
 " ster, arisen from the excrements of the evil  
 " spirit, to be fatal to our nation, who has  
 " wrongfully taken thee for her *Manitou*; thou  
 " hast paid no regard to the offerings which we  
 " have made thee, and hast allowed our enemies,  
 " whom thou dost plainly protect; to overcome  
 " a party of our countrymen, and to make  
 " them slaves: therefore our old men assembled  
 " in council have unanimously decreed and with  
 " the advice of the chief of the white warriors,  
 " that to expiate thy ingratitude towards us,  
 " thou shalt be burnt alive." At the end of  
 this sentence all the assembly said, *hou, hou,*  
*hou, hou.*

As I wished to get this monster, because I could not get that snake I spoke to you of before, I took the following method: I went to the priest, made him a small present, and bid my interpreter tell him, that he should persuade his countrymen, that if they burnt this evil genius, there might arise one from his ashes which  
 would

could prove fatal to them ; and that I would go on purpose a-cross the great lake in order to deliver them of it. He found my reasons good, and by means of the little present I gave him, he got the sentence changed, and he was ordered to be killed with clubs ; As I desired to have the monster, without being mutilated, I informed them that they must deliver it to my people, who would strangle it ; for if any of their nation killed it, some misfortune or other might happen to him from it. They still approved my reasons, and delivered the animal to me, on condition that I should carry it far from their country. It was accordingly strangled ; but having neither spirits of wine nor brandy to preserve it in, I was obliged to get it dissected, in order to be able to bring it to France, to satisfy your curiosity in regard to subjects of natural history \*.

I shall finish this letter by another account of the superstition of these people, and of the divine service they give to horrid animals. In

VOL. I.

O

1756

---

\* The skeleton of this monster, or false divinity, is now in the natural history cabinet of *M. de Fayolles*, clerk of the office of the American colonies belonging to the French.

1756 there arrived a deputation of Indians at Fort *Chartres*, of the nation of *Missouris*\*; there was an old woman among them, who passed for a magician; she wore round her naked body, a living rattle snake, whose bite is mortal, if the remedy is not applied the moment after.

This priestess of the devil, spoke to the serpent, which seemed to understand what she said: I see, said she, thou art weary of staying here; go, then, return home, I shall find thee at my return: the reptile immediately ran into the woods, and took the road of the *Missouris*. If I had been inclined to be superstitious, I should have told you that I had seen the devil appear to these nations under the figure of a snake. Many Missionaries have been willing to persuade us in their relations and edifying letters, that the devil appears to these people, in order to be adored by them, but it is easy to see, that there is nothing preternatural in it, and that it is a mere juggle.

You

---

\* A nation living to the westward of *Louisiana*, on a river which bears their name, and falls into the *Mississippi*.

You know besides, that all animals, even the most ferocious, are tamed by man, I do not pretend to say that the snake of the pretended witch went into her country. All I can tell you is, that I always had a very great antipathy against these animals, and that when I meet with them, I take a pleasure in crushing their heads.

I remember, that in the village of the *Péan-guichias*, a nation allied to the *Illinois*, one of our soldiers was very near getting into a very bad scrape. He went into an Indian hut and found a live snake, which he killed with a hatchet, not knowing that the master of the hut had made his *Manitou* of it. The Indian arrived at the same time in a terrible passion to find his deity dead; he asserted that it was the soul of his father, who died about a year before; he having shot two serpents which were pairing upon the point of a rock, fell sick and died soon after.

The imagination of the old man being troubled by the height of the fever, he thought he saw the two snakes coming to reproach him with their death; he therefore recommended it to his son in dying, never to kill any of these animals,

mals, fearing that they would likewise be the cause of his death\*. Knowing the genius of these people, I advised the soldier, whom the Indian looked upon as one who had slain a deity, to pretend to be drunk, and to do as if he would kill me and his comrades. The Indians, not knowing that it was only a farce, were the first to cry out, that the white warrior † had lost his wits. I asked for cords to tie him; and as I seemed very angry with him, the chiefs and the warriors came to intercede for him, saying that it was a man who had lost his senses by drinking; that the same often happened to the red men: in order to give more colour to the imposture, I waited yet for the Cacique's wife to beg me, and appeared pacified in deference to her sex, which I respected very much.

I presented the master of the snake with a bottle of brandy, to drown his grief. The  
Indians

---

\* I have seen a peasant in France, who had killed an owl on his neighbour's roof; and his father dying some time after, he believed that his death was caused by that bird of ill presage.

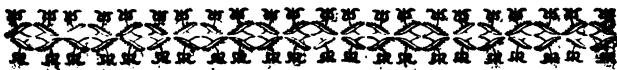
† So they call our soldiers.

Indians are excessively fond of this liquor, and grow furious when they have drank too much of it. After their drunkenness is over, they say that they have neither spoken nor done any thing, and attribute all their follies to the brandy believing to justify their conduct by acknowledging that they had lost their wits. When a drunken Indian kills another, the death is not revenged. But these people take care seldom or never to drink all at once, those who are sober keep in bounds the rest, and the women hide both offensive and defensive weapons. Brandy may be reckoned among the pernicious things which have contributed towards the depopulation of North America: this liquor makes men brutes, and often kills them. I have sometimes seen drunken Indians kill each other with hatchets and clubs.

I am now ready to leave the *Illinois*, and expect to be in *New Orleans* in January 1757. This letter sets out in a piragua, which M. de *Macarty* sends with dispatches to the governor.

I am, &c.

*At the Illinois, the 10th  
November 1756.*




## L E T T E R X.

*To the same.*

*The Author leaves the Illinois: His Navigation down the Mississippi: he encamps in an Island formed by that River. His Soldiers make him Governor of it.*

S I R,


 YOU inquire, whether the Indians have captains amongst them, and whether they are governed by a king? The time I have spent among them procures me the pleasure of satisfying your curiosity on that head. You must know, then, that they are divided into tribes or nations, each of which is governed by a petty king or Cacique, who only depends on the *Great Spirit*, or Supreme Being; these Caciques reign despotically, without making their authority odious, and know how to make themselves

elves respected and beloved. They likewise have the satisfaction of being regarded by their subjects almost as demi-gods, born for the happiness of this world ; for they have the tenderness of fathers for the people of their tribe ; and that name flatters them much more than all the pompous titles of the *Grand Signior* or the *Great Mogul*. Those Asiatic emperors are often exposed, in their extensive dominions, to revolutions, by which their life is endangered ; for often tributary kings rebel against them, and kill them with their whole family.

The crime of high treason is unknown among the *Americans* ; the chiefs and Caciques go every where without fear. If any one should be bold enough to attempt any thing against their lives, he would be punished as a horrible monster, and the whole family of the murderer would be exterminated without mercy.

As to the captains or chiefs of war, who command their armies against their enemies, this post is occupied only by such as have given signal proofs of courage in defence of their country in several combats ; and as the generals go naked, as well as the other Indians, the marks of wounds they bear upon their body are suffi-



sient to distinguish them from the rest, and serve instead of testimonials to them.

The old men, who cannot go to war any more, are not useless to the nation. They hold speeches, and the people hear them as oracles. Every thing is done as they advise it; and the young men say, that they having lived longer than themselves, must of course have more experience and knowledge. When I admired the countenance which these old men enjoyed, they told me, that since they could no longer fight for their country, they taught others to defend it. The warriors, when they return from an expedition, never fail to throw part of the booty into the huts of those old men, who have exhorted them, and excited their courage. The prisoners of war are always given to the oldest people in the nation, who make them their slaves. The old warriors who cannot go to war any more, harangue the soldiers. The orator begins with striking against the post with a club, and mentions all the fine actions he has done in war, that is, how many scalps he has taken from different nations. The hearers answer, *hau, hau*, i. e. that is true. The Indians abhor lying, and say that a liar is not a true man.

The

The old speaker begins his discourse, and says: "If I were younger and more vigorous, to conduct you against our enemies, as I have formerly done, you should see me go on the tips of my toes. Go my comrades, as men of courage, and with the heart of a lion\*; never shut your ears, sleep like hares, go like the roe-buck, do not fear the cold, nor hesitate to go into the water like ducks; when you are pursued, hide well your retreat. Above all, do not fear the arrows of your enemies, shew them that you are true warriors and men. Lastly, when you find an opportunity, use all your arrows on the enemy, and after that break in upon them with your clubs in hand; strike, slay, and extirpate; it is better to die fighting than to be taken and burnt."

At the end of this harangue, the old warrior presents the calumet to the *Tacha-Mingo*, that is, the general or chief of war, and to all his officers, who smoke it, each after their rank; and all those who have not yet been to war come to smoke

---

\* An hyperbole no Indian in America would make use of, not knowing that creature, which is not to be met with in that country. F.

smoke it, by way of enlisting themselves; they dance the dance of war, and, after that ceremony, they distribute dog's flesh, which, as I have already observed, is a dish principally appropriated to warriors\*.

M. du Tiffenet told me of an accident that happened to his father, who was one of the first officers that came to *Louisiana* with M. de Bienville, M. du Tiffenet being at an Indian nation, together with some Frenchmen who came to barter goods; the Indians wanted to scalp them; M. du Tiffenet had learnt their language, and heard their discourse, and as he wore a wig, he took it from his head, and threw it on the ground, saying from time to time, You will have my scalp, take it up, if you dare to do it. The astonishment of these people was inexpressible, for M. du Tiffenet had got his head shaved a little before this happened; he told them afterwards, that they were very much in the wrong to attempt to hurt him, for he only came to make  
an

---

\* It is very remarkable, that, when the ancient kings of *Macedonia* performed the lustration of their armies, a dog was killed, and divided into two parts, and the whole army, with the king at their head, went through the two halves of the dog. F.

an alliance with them; that, if they compelled him, he would burn the water in their lakes and rivers, to hinder them from sailing, and set fire to their forests; he got a little pot, and put some brandy in it, and set it on fire with a match; the Indians, who were not yet acquainted with brandy, were amazed; at the same time he took out of his pocket a convex glass, and set fire to a rotten tree by means of the sun. These people really believed, that the officer had the power of burning their rivers and their woods; they caressed him, loaded him with presents, and sent him home well escorted, that no one might do him any harm. Since that time *M. de Bienville* has made use of *M. du Tisfenet* in several negociations towards making alliances with the Indians,

*M. du Tisfenet's* adventure puts me in mind of that of an Italian, who was in the suite of *M. Tonty*, the then governor of *Fort Louis* among the *Illinois*. This Italian set out from thence by land, to join *M. de la Salle*, to whom he could have been very useful, by teaching him the road which he was to take in order to come to the *Mississippi*, if he could have been with him in time; he likewise saved his life by a singular stratagem. Some Indians being willing to kill him,

him, he told them they were much in the wrong in attempting to destroy a man that bore them all in his heart. This discourse amazed the Barbarians; he assured them, that, if they would give him time till the next morning, he would convince them of the truth of what he had asserted; adding, that if he deceived them, they should do what they pleased with him. Then, fixing a little mirror on his breast, the Indians, who were much surpris'd to see themselves, as they imagined, in the heart of this man, granted him his life.

I have commanded the convoy in descending the river, which *M. Aubri* brought up: *M. de Macarty* trusted the English prisoners to my care to bring them to *New Orleans*; they are the same which the *Chevalier de Villiers* and the Indian chief *Papéchangouhia* took. I have made haste to come to the capital before the thawing of the ice, which breaks loose in the northern rivers, and follows the current; I ran the risk of being stopt by it, if I had not given orders for rowing as hard as possible; I even made use of the English prisoners to relieve my soldiers: as every one has an equal right to his life on such occasions, the officers likewise lent a helping hand, to encourage the crew.

After

After passing the rocks at *Prudhomme*\*, there are no others in the *Mississippi*; and when there are several boats, they are fastened together, and go down with the current day and night. There is only one man at the helm, and one at the head of every boat, to take care of the floating trees. It is a pleasure to go down this fine river: the same distance which, in going up, takes three months and a half, in descending is performed in ten or twelve days, when the water is high in the river.

I must not forget to mention, that on the first of January the soldiers come in the morning to wish their officers a happy new year, who generally return the civility by a present of brandy. I was just encamped on a little island about two leagues in circuit, situated on one of the branches of the *Mississippi*, which I was descending. This isle was surrounded with very tall trees. A facetious gascoon soldier, as those of this nation generally are, gave his comrades to under-

---

\* These rocks form the shores of the *Mississippi*, which are on both sides like walls of five hundred feet high. Formerly there was the Fort *Prudhomme* in this place, so named from a fellow-traveller of *M. de la Salle*, who died there, and occasioned the fort to be called after him.

understand that they might get an extraordinary new year's gift if they would perform the ceremony of receiving me governor of the island. The serjeant approved this droll thought, and immediately gave his orders for it. He began with graving my name on the bark of a tree, ordered the swivels to be charged with powder, and made the troops appear in arms. The drummer beat a whirl, and the serjeant as master of the ceremonies, taking off his hat, said "in the king's name \*, ye tygers, wolves, bears, oxen, stags, roe-bucks, and other animals of this island, shall acknowledge our commander as your governor, and obey him in all that he shall command you for his service;" one of the soldiers then fired the swivels of the boats, which were accompanied with a general salute from the small arms. The sudden explosion of these fire arms, frightened the wild oxen, who went into the river in order to swim through it and to gain the continent: the soldiers went after them in a piragua and killed four of them, together with two roe-bucks that just reached the shore, and presented them to me as my property, which obliged me to stay here in order to dry the flesh for consumption, during

---

\* *De par le Roi.*

during the remaining part of our voyage. In order to take advantage of the fun of my soldiers, which I took good care to reward immediately, I had a mind to visit the interior parts of my government: but I was hardly gone half a league, when I saw a bear, who was quietly eating acorns under a great oak: I fired my piece at him, but the ball only went into the side of the animal, which was monstrously fat; as soon as he felt the wound, he wanted to come up to me, but he was too heavy to run; then feigning to run from him, I drew him towards my soldiers, who soon surrounded and killed him as guilty of felony and rebellion. They held a court martial, where the serjeant presided. The corporal, who acted as the king's attorney-general, gave it as his opinion, that in order not to ruin the fine coat of the bear, who had revolted against his master, he should only be shot in the head, which was punctually executed.

He was then flayed, and I have taken his skin, which is a very black one, and which I shall not relinquish, any more than Hercules did that of the *Nemean* lion which he conquered.

The



The soldiers melted the fat, and got above one hundred and twenty pots of oil from it\*, you must know that the bears come out of their holes as soon as the fruits begin to ripen, and they do not go in again till they are all eaten up. They then stay in their retreats till the next season, and neither eat nor drink during that interval; their grease is the only thing they feed upon, by sucking their paws. It is dangerous to meet a lean one without company. The Indians make a great trade with bears' skins, and treat their friends with their paws and tongues; they have often regaled me with them on my voyages, and I found them extremely good.

I direct this letter to *Campeach*, to *M. de Arragory*, the agent of the French marine, who will send it to *Cadiz*, from whence it will come safer to you than by our vessels, as Spain is not at war with England: I do not write duplicates of this letter, besides, I hope to set out for Europe next April.

I am, S I R, &c. &c.

*At New Orleans, the 25th  
of February 1757.*

L E T.

---

\* *Bears oil* is very good to eat, in *Louisiana* they make use of it for sallad, for frying, and for sauces, and prefer it to hog's lard. The pot holds about two quarts English.



L E T T E R XI.

*To the Same.*

*The Author sets out for Europe. He fights an English Privateer. He embarks at Cape Francois on a Vessel belonging to a Fleet of twenty-six Merchantmen, which were almost all taken in his Sight by Privateers. Taking of a little Vessel from the Enemy. Arrival at Brest.*

S I R,

HAVING found no vessel here to return to *France*, I was obliged to go on board the brigantine *Union* fitted out as a sloop of war, and commanded by captain *Gau-jean* who is well know for having taken five English ships during the war, on his voyage from *France* to *Louisiana*.

VOL. I.

P

We

We set sail from the *Balise* on the first of April 1757, for Cape *François*. On the 20th of April being in sight of *Turk's* island \*, we perceived a ship, which we supposed to belong to the enemy; she chased us at night, and being a prime sailer, came up with us in three hours' time: the English privateer saluted us with a bullet from his cannon, and called out to us to surrender to the king of England; to which we returned a broadside, and a volley of the small arms; after which I hailed him to strike his colours for the king of France, or else he should be sunk; the privateer finding that he had to meddle with a dealer in bullets, made off, and got among the rocks near *Turk's* island, hoping to draw us nearer to the shore, where we might have been lost. But our captain, who was very prudent, and a good mariner at the same time, saw the snare which was laid for him; therefore, instead of following the privateer, he continued his voyage, and we happily arrived in the harbour of Cape *François* on the first of May. There we found the Squadron of *M. de Beaufremont*, destined for the succours of *Canada*, having on board *M. de Bart*, whom the king had appointed governor and lieutenant-general

---

\* *L'isle Turque*.

neral on the isle of *St. Domingo*. My first care on going on shore was to pay my respects to him. That general, who is always ready to serve unfortunate officers, prevented my cares, by dispatching me four days after my arrival, and sparing me the expence I should have been at if I had stayed on this island, he procured me a free passage at the king's expence, as a fleet of twenty-six merchantmen were ready to sail for France, under the convoy of *M. de Beaufremont*, who brought them as far as the *Cayques* islands, where he left them, in order to proceed on his destination according to the orders of the court.

I must tell you that I preferably chose a *Bordeaux* vessel, called the *Sun*, captain *Odonoir*; (imitating the Indians, who indeed make a divinity of the sun). But the event has shewn that I was very happy in my choice; for almost all the vessels which composed the fleet have been taken in my sight. Only four arrived in France, the *Sun* was the first: she came to *Brest* in forty-five days, after taking an English ship in the latitude of the *Newfoundland* bank. I landed at *Brest* the fifteenth of June 1757, and immediately waited on the Count *du Guai*, commander of the marines in this port; I then paid a visit to

M. *Hocquart*, the counsellor of state and intendant of the marine in this department, whom I informed of the death of M. *Auberville*, who had succeeded for a time to M. *Michael-de la Rouvilliere*, as commissary general of the marine, and regulator of the provisions of \* *Louisiana*. M. *Hocquart* was known for his probity when he was intendant of *New France*; it is certain that he came back from thence indebted forty-thousand livres, which the king, contented with his services, has made him a present of; a fine example for M. *Bigot*, his successor; but if he has not brought back treasures from his administration, he has at least the satisfaction of passing for one of the gallantest men of his rank: he has been regretted by all the *Canadians*, and even by the *Indians*, who, as I have already said, know how to distinguish merit.

On owning to this gentleman, that I had no money to go to court with, he was so kind, as to order M. *Gaucher*, clerk of the treasurer of the colonies to give me some. He likewise offered me his table during my stay in this town, which I intend to leave the twenty-second of this month.

You

---

\* *Ordonnateur*.

You will, perhaps, be amazed to hear, that in the space of eight months, I have seen two winters, two summers, and two springs; I shall now explain it to you. I wrote to you, that I left the *Illinois* at the end of December, 1756, when the *Mississippi* began to freeze, and descending that great river, I came to *New Orleans* in January 1757, the climate of which is comparable to that of the *Hierian* islands, where our regiment was in 1744. That is, it was the season of gardening or spring. I left *Louisiana* the first of April 1757, and came to *Cape François* the first of May, and found summer there: I embarked for Europe on the fourth, and after coming out of the *Bahama Channel* we met with spring; continuing our voyage to the great sands of *Newfoundland*, we saw on the twenty-second, at sun-rising, a floating mountain of ice, which at first we took to be a sail; but the keen air coming from it convinced us at last that it was a piece of ice from the frozen ocean. On the fifteenth of June 1757, we came to *Brest*, where we found summer. This therefore is a pretty extraordinary case.

I am, S I R, &c.

*At Brest, the 18th  
of June 1757.*

P 3

L E T.



## L E T T E R XII.

*To the Same,*

*The Author arrives at Court, receives a Gratification from the King, and an Order to go to Rochefort. He embarks there for Louisiana.*

S I R,

I AM now once more at *Rochefort* from whence I sailed for *Louisiana*, eight years ago. I come from the court, where I presented to the comptroller general and minister of the marine, *M. de Moras*, the governor's letter, which explains the motives of my voyage. He was so kind as to speak with me in his cabinet, in presence of *M. de la Porte*, chief of the

the board of plantations. He questioned me on the present state of *Louisiana*. I assured the minister that I had left in our interest all the nations of that vast continent, which I had visited, and that the *Cherokees* were come to treat of peace with the French. He likewise asked me, whether I thought the colony could be attacked. I answered that there was little probability of the English attempting to attack it, on account of the difficulty of coming in through the mouth of the *Mississippi* at the fort of *Balise*; and that the colony wanted no other fortifications, than those which nature had provided it with.

. M. *de Moras* obtained for me from the king a gratification of a thousand livres in order to enable me to go to the waters which my health required I should take; after which I received an order from his majesty to go back to *Louisiana*, and continue my services there; therefore I came hither without loss of time in order to embark; we intend to set sail as soon as the convoy will be fitted out for *Cape Breton*.

M. *Druis Imbuto* succeeds M. *Normant de Mési*, as *Intendant* of the marine. The king



could not choose a better person both on account of his abilities, and of his integrity, and likewise on account of his zeal for the king's interest in this important place. This intendant made me the same offer as his predecessor.

I am, SIR, &c,

*At Rochefort, the 12th  
of September 1757.*

L E T.




L E T T E R XIII.

*To the same.*

*The Author leaves Rochefort; he meets with three English Merchant-Ships, taken by M. de Place, of which one was burnt and another sunk. He stops at the Isle of Grenada. Navigation along Jamaica.*

S I R,


 Wrote to you from *Rochefort*, that we intended to set out in December 1757; but the convoy destined to succour *Cape Breton* having in part been taken by the English fleet, we were obliged to fit out another. During that time a Squadron of ten great English men of war having alarmed the coast of *Aunis*, that has retarded us till the month of *May*. This Squadron disappearing, we set sail on the tenth of the same month.

I was

I was on board the King's frigate *La Fortune*, together with M. de Rochemore, commissary-general of the marine, and *ordonnateur* of the province of *Louisiana*. M. de Place, a captain of a man of war, commanded the *Eopalmé* frigate of thirty guns, destined for our convoy: we met with three English vessels on our voyage, which only cost us three cannon-shot. M. de Place sunk one of them, and burnt the other, after taking the crew and the goods out of them. As to the third, it came from the coast of *Guinea*, was richly laden, and had on board four hundred and forty negroes, who were in part sold to the isle of *Grenada*. The Baron de Bonvouff, who has just been appointed governor of this island, entertained us very generously and politely during our stay there. We remained there till the twenty-second of July, when we sailed for *Louisiana*, keeping alongside of *Jamaica*, to avoid the great ships of the enemy, which never come to those shores: we took that course in order to deceive the spy, and we arrived happily at the mouth of the *Mississippi* on the twelfth of August.

M. de Rochemore \*, an honest *ordonnateur*, who is very zealous for the interest of the King, will have

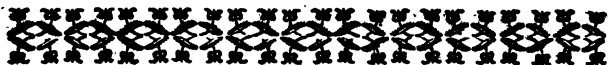
---

\* The brother of a M. Rochemore who is now commodore.

have a great deal of trouble in reforming the abuses that have crept into the management of the colony's affairs, since the war; and during our voyage, I foretold him, that he would be much disturbed in his administration: what I foresaw really happened; and by the same ships which brought us hither, the court has been prejudiced against him, with a view to deprive him of his place. I was but just arrived at *New Orleans*, when the governor gave me orders to prepare to go with a detachment to the *Alibamons*, an Indian nation two hundred and fifty leagues from the capital. I take advantage of the opportunity of the King's ships, which will sail for France at the end of the year; and I write to you by duplicates, that if one ship be taken, you may get the letter by the other. When I shall be informed of the manners of the nations which I shall pass through, and which are situated to the east of *New Orleans*, I shall describe that country to you, which is reckoned very fine and very good.

*At New Orleans, the 10th  
of November 1758.*

L E T.



## L E T T E R    X I V .

*To the same.*

*The Author departs from New Orleans for the Allibamons. His Navigation on the Lake Pontchartrain. Short Description of Mobile.*

S I R,

I Left *New Orleans* on the fourteenth of December, according to *M. de Kerle-rec's* orders, and set out for the *Allibamons*. I sailed from the little creek of *St. Jean*, which is situated in the lake *Pontchartrain*. There is a portage of about a quarter of a mile from *New Orleans* to this creek \*, which is about two leagues long; the winds were favourable to us, and on the twentieth of December I arrived  
at

---

\* *Bayouc*, a small inlet where the tide goes up.

at the bay and fort of *Mobile*, which is fifty leagues distant from the capital.

The *Mobile* was formerly the chief settlement in *Loufiana*, and the residence of the governor, *ordonnateur*, and of the chief officers. The superior council held its sittings there likewise.

There is a pretty regular fort, capable of resisting a whole army of Indians; but European troops could soon take it. It is situated on a bay where the tide comes up; and between two rivers, one of which is small, and is called the river of the *Chaftaus*, the other is more considerable than the *Seine* before *Rouen*, is called *Mobile* river, and rises in the *Apalachian* mountains; it is the rendez-vous of all the Indians who live to the eastward. They come there to receive the presents which the King annually distributes to them by his governor. The soil about *Mobile* is gravelly; however, the cattle succeeds exceedingly well there, and multiplies very much. The inhabitants are very laborious, and trade with the Spaniards; they go to the fort of *Pensacola*, which is near *Mobile*, and get salt beef, wild fowl, maize, rice, and other eatables from thence. The inhabitants of *Mobile* likewise carry on a trade with tar. As to the  
fur-

fur-trade with the Indians, the officers carry it on exclusively of all others, contrary to the King's intention.

About this place, there are white and red bays \* and wild cherry-trees †. There are likewise white and red cedars ‡; the latter is very fine, and very good for inlaid work; its smell expels insects, and the wood indeed is incorruptible. There are several sorts of trees in the forests hereabouts, which are unknown in Europe, and some which abound with a gum like turpentine. There are likewise cypresses § of such a size, that the Indians make piraguas out of one piece, which can contain sixty men.

Before the French came into *Louisiana*, the Indians constructed their boats in the following manner.

---

\* The bays are probably the *Laurus aestivalis* Linn. which have white flowers; and the *Laurus Barbonia* Linn. which has red flower-cups, and black or purple berries. F.

† The wild cherries of this country grow in clusters, and there are chiefly three kinds of them growing in America, viz. *Prunus Virginiana*, *Canadensis*, and *Lusitanica*, Linn.

‡ The red cedar is the *Juniperus Virginiana* Linn. and the white cedar is the *Cupressus Thyoides* Linn.

§ Or cedars.

manner. They went to the banks of some rivers, which are very numerous in this vast region, and which by their rapidity tear up by the roots the trees which stand on their banks. They took their dimensions for length and breadth, and accordingly chose such a tree as they wanted; after which they set fire to it, and as the tree burnt on they scraped away the live coals with a flint or an arrow; and having sufficiently hollowed it out, they set it afloat. They are very well skilled in conducting these little vessels upon their lakes and rivers. They employ them in time of war, and likewise load them with the furs and dried flesh which they bring back from their hunts.

Their instruments and their weapons were made in the following manner: they chose a young tree for that purpose, in which they made an incision with a flint, or pebble as sharp as a razor, and they put a stone cut in form of a hatchet into the incision; therefore, as the tree grew up, it enshafed the stone, which by that means became inseparable from it, and they afterwards cut it off in order to make use of it; their lances and their darts were made in the same manner. They had clubs of a very hard wood.

As



As to their instruments of agriculture, they only made use of the bones of animals, or of spades of a very hard wood. The ground throughout *America* is very fruitful; the grass there grows high and close; and after the frost has dried it up, the Indians set fire to it; then they dig the ground with their spades, sow it, and reap three months after their crops.

They plant maize, millet, beans, and other leguminous plants, potatoes, pistachios, and water-melons; gourds are likewise very common there, and the French inhabitants call them *girmonds*.

Their kitchen-utensils were dishes and pots of earthen ware, and deep wooden dishes. They made cups of calabashes, and spoons \* of the horns of wild oxen, which they cut through the middle, and form into the proper shape by means of fire.

As soon as we shall have got ready the provisions for our voyage, and for the garrison of the fort, we shall set out, M. *Aubert* and myself in a boat armed with soldiers and *Mobile* Indians, whom

---

\* Which they call *Micouens*.

whom we have hired to row during the voyage.

M. *Aubert*, though he is adjutant of the fort at *Mobile*, has been appointed, by M. *de Kerle-rec*, to command Fort *Toulouse* at the *Allibamons*, which is contrary to the King's order, forbidding all majors and adjutants to do other functions than those of the place they belong to.

If any ships arrive from Europe, I shall perhaps receive letters from you. M. *de Velle*, who commands here, will be so kind as to send them to me with the first convoy.

I am, S I R, &c.

At *Mobile*, the 6th of  
January 1759.







## L E T T E R XV.

*To the same.*

*The Author sets out from Mobile for the Allibamons. Description of the Manners of this Nation. Their Way of punishing Adultery.*

S I R,


 AM at last arrived at Fort *Toulouse*  

 I  among the *Allibamons*. I have been  

 fifty days a-coming; because, taking  
 boat in the rainy season, the water in the river  
 was often swelled to twelve or fifteen feet; this  
 sudden increase was caused by the heavy rains,  
 which are frequent hereabouts, and by the high  
 hills that run along this river.

We have been obliged to work hard against  
 the rapidity of the current, and there were  
 days during which we scarcely advanced a  
 league.

league. It is impossible to sail, on account of the woods, the hills, and turnings of the river; and therefore we could do no otherwise than go along the shores. One day I had the misfortune to see my boat hemmed in by the branches of a tree \* that was set under water: we were benighted in this disagreeable situation, and obliged to wait for the break of day. But as this river rises and falls by the floods, I found myself now quite in the air in my boat. We were twenty-five leagues from the mouth of the river, and the *Mobilian* savages that accompanied me, comforted me by the hope that the next tide would set me a-float again; and really the tide mounting up the river from *Mobile* bay delivered us from our uncomfortable situation. You see by this, dear Sir, what a difference it makes in navigating an *European* and an *American* river.

M. *Adert* fell sick on the way, and I prevailed on him to stay at *Mobile*, for the recovery of his health; and so he came from thence hither on horseback, by crossing the fir-woods, which

Q 2

are

---

\* There are hereabouts cedar-trees of so prodigious a size, that ten men can scarcely clasp them; which easily accounts for the goodness and fertility of the country, and besides this its climate is one of the most healthy.

are very thin. *M. de Montberaut* is to give him up the command of this post by order of the governor, after having instructed him during three months, of its situation, environs, and many other articles. This latter gentleman\* has a high reputation among the Indians of this country, who call him the *man of valour*, i. e. the *hero*. He was remarkable for the spirited speeches which he delivered, in a manner analogous to the way of thinking of these nations; This officer had a quarrel with the Jesuits, and therefore asked to be recalled; and was succeeded by *M. Aubert*, the brother of Father *Aubert*, a Jesuit missionary in *Louisiana*. *M. Montberaut* is a declared enemy to these missionaries. Whilst Father *Le Roi* was at *Allibamons*, he wrote to the governor to discredit this officer, to whom the soldier who was to carry the letter delivered it. The commander saw after this the Jesuit, who shewed him many civilities, according to the political principles of these good fathers: The officer asked him, whether he had written something against him. The Jesuit, not suspecting his letter to be in the officer's hand, assured him by all that was sacred he had not. Then *M. Montberaut*

---

\* He is the brother of the Count *de Montaut*, who belonged to the household of the Dauphin.

*Montberaut* called Father *Le Roi* an impostor and a cheat, produced the letter, and fixed it at the gate of the fort, giving it in charge to the sentinels to take care of it; and since that time there were no Jesuits among the *Allibamons*.

Whilst I am here going to speak of the *Allibamons*, I shall have an opportunity to treat likewise of the *Tafkikis*, the *Ostashepas*, the *Tonicas*, the *Karowytas*, the *Abekas*, the *Talapoashas*, the *Conshakis*, and the *Pakanas*, whose manners are all nearly related to one another. All these nations put together can raise about four thousand warriors. They are all well-shaped men, live commonly along the river sides, and no sooner are you arrived among these well-behaved men, whose women are of the same character, and for the greater part beautiful, but they come to receive you at the landing-place, shaking hands with you, and presenting you with the calumet. After having smoked, they ask from you the cause of your coming, and the time you spent on the road; what stay you intend to make among them, whether you have a wife and children\*.

They

---

\* The politeness of the Indians goes even so far as to offer to the Europeans their girls, and for that purpose the chiefs

They likewise inquire the particulars of the war in *Canada*, and ask how the King their father does. They then bring you a dish made of maize or Indian corn, which they coarsely pound, and boil in water, generally together with some venison \*. They likewise serve up bread made of the flour of the same corn, baked in hot ashes, roasted young turkies, broiled venison, pancakes baked with nut-oil, chefnuts when in season, boiled with bears greafe or oil, roebucks tongues, together with hen and turtle † eggs.

The soil of *Louisiana* resembles, in the lower parts of the colony, that of *Egypt* after the Nile has overflown the country; it is excellent, and chiefly so in the country of the nations I now speak of.

The melons are here prodigiously large, full of juice, and in great plenty: the water-melons are

---

speak the next morning in the following manner in the village: Young men and warriors, do not be foolish, love the master of life; hunt for the support of the French, who bring us our wants: and you young girls, do not be hard-hearted, nor ungrateful with your body in respect to the white warriors, for to get their blood; by this alliance we shall get wit like them, and be respected by our enemies,

\* This is called *Sagamitè*.

† Sea-tortoise,

are so delicious, that they are given to the sick to quench their thirst during the burning fits of the fever. Potatoes are plentiful here; and the Europeans are very fond of this kind of root, which tastes like chefnuts roasted in hot ashes.

The Indians are generally contented with one wife, of whom they are jealous to excess. When an Indian lies at a village where he has no wife, he hires a girl for a night or two, as he pleases, and her parents never have any objection to it; they concern themselves very little about their girls, saying their bodies are free: the Indian girls do not abuse this liberty; and they find it their interest to keep up an appearance of modesty, in order to engage their lovers to ask them in marriage: but in regard to wives the Indians maintain, that they have sold their liberty by marrying, and that they must not be served by other men than their husbands. The men keep the privilege of having several wives, and they can leave them whenever they please; but this seldom happens. When a woman is caught in adultery, the least punishment is being repudiated. The husband then leaves the hut; and if they have any children, he takes the boys, and the wife the girls; she must remain a widow for one year; but he can marry again immediately.

Q 4

He



He can likewise take his wife again, therefore she must not enter on a second marriage till a whole year be past.

The marriage of the Indians is quite simple, as I have already observed; the mutual consent of the parties is the only tie which joins them. The future husband makes some presents of furs and victuals in the hut of his bride's father; if they be received, a festival is made, to which the whole village is invited; after the meal, the exploits of the new husband's ancestors are sung, and a dance ensues. The next day one of the oldest men in the village presents the bride to the relations of her husband; and thus the whole ceremony of marriage is concluded. All the Indians deduce their lineage from the women, alleging that they may be sure of their origin on that side, and accordingly of their having their mother's blood in their veins; but that claiming their descent from the men was uncertain. The great warriors and the best huntsmen chuse the prettiest girls; the others have only their refuse, and all the ugly ones left. The girls, knowing that they cannot be mistresses of their hearts after they are married, know how to dispose of them to the greatest advantage: for when once they have a husband, all coquetry must cease; they

they must apply themselves to their duties in their houses, such as preparing their husbands' meals, dressing the skins, making shoes, spinning the wool of the wild oxen, and making little baskets in which they are very well skilled and industrious.

The manner of punishing the infidelity of their wives is as follows: the husband must first be perfectly convinced of his wife's misbehaviour by his own eyes, and then she is watched by his relations and her own. The husband is then no longer allowed to keep his wife, though he should wish it; because the Indians say, that it is unworthy and beneath a true man to live with a wife who has failed so essentially in her duty to him. In this case, the husband goes to the *Cacique*, and tells him his story. The chief immediately orders some people to go and cut little switches, and all keep a profound secret. The chief then gives orders for a grand dance, which every man, woman, boy, and girl in the village is obliged to attend, unless they will expose themselves to be fined; but there are hardly ever any absent: in the midst of the dance the guilty woman is extended on the floor, and beaten on the back and stomach without mercy, and her seducer undergoes the same ceremony.

When

When these wretches have been well flogged, a relation on each side comes and lays a stick across the criminals and the executioners. That moment they cease to beat; but then the husband comes and cuts off all his wife's hair close to her head\*, and reproaches her in presence of all the people, that is, he represents to her how much she has done wrong to act as she had done with him, that he had let her want for nothing, but that since she had however transgressed, she might now go with her seducer; whose hair they likewise cut on his forehead, and tell him, pointing to his paramour, There, that is thy wife. He is at liberty to marry her that instant, but he must go to settle in another village.

When a married woman debauches a married man, the women meet together among themselves each with a stick of an arm's length, and go to the criminal woman, whom they beat without mercy, which creates great mirth and laughter amongst the young people; the women would kill the guilty wretch, if the men did not snatch away the sticks,

Physic,

---

\* The Indian women have long hair in tresses.

Physic, war, hunting and fishing are the only arts which the Indians are ambitious of knowing. They educate their children very hardy, and make them bathe and swim in winter time at day-break; which done the young men come of their own accord before their chief warrior, who holds a speech to them, telling them never to fear the water; that they may be pursued by their enemies; and that if they are taken they are burnt alive; that they must on this occasion prove that they are true men, by uttering no complaints\*.

When the harangue is finished, the chief scarifies their thighs, breast and back, in order to use them to pain, and he then gives them great blows with leather straps†. The young men are then allowed to take place among the warriors; and when they have done some great action in the wars, they are marked with needles,

in

---

\* The Indians are obliged to support bad luck with heroic constancy, in order that their valour may descend to their posterity.

† These leather straps are of the breadth of three fingers. The Indians use them for carrying their bundles when they set out on a journey.

in the manner I have explained to you when I spoke of the *Illinois*.

Their children whilst they suck their mother's milk, are daily bathed in cold water during winter; and when they grow up, the earth is their bed. As the Indians love their children very much, they accustom them very early to fatigue; and indeed as their whole body is naked, it is no more sensible to the cold than the face and hands.

The old men, that cannot follow them, whenever they make a retreat, desire to be killed with clubs, both to spare them the wretchedness of a decrepit condition, and to avoid falling into the hands of their enemies, who would certainly burn or eat them; for the Indians in their wars kill men, women and infants at the breast, which together with the ravages of the small pox, is a cause of the depopulation of America.

It will not be amiss Sir, to observe that it is merely an act of humanity on certain occasions when a son puts an end to his father's life. The Indians have a great veneration for their old men; they regulate their conduct by their advice, for they undertake nothing with-

without their consent. They likewise take great care of the old men, and I have seen their chiefs on their return from a hunting party, before they shared the game, lay aside the share of the old people, which is likewise appropriated to the use of widows and orphans, whose husbands and fathers have been killed in defence of their country. The Indians are very hospitable towards strangers with whom they are in peace, and kind to their allies and friends, but cruel and unmerciful to their enemies. They are surprised and even scandalized to see a number of Englishmen at *New Orleans*, drawn thither in time of war, for the sake of trading under the specious pretence of coming to exchange prisoners\*. A cacique lately returned from *New Orleans* freely owned to me, that he had a great mind to break their heads for killing the *French* in the north, that is, during the siege of *Quebec*, and that he was tempted to take his revenge upon those that were at *New Orleans*. He added,

---

\* Here our author inserts a long invective against the English who come in vessels to *New Orleans* with prisoners of war on board, which they offer to exchange, and that under this cloak, they get information of the strength and situation of the colony, and buy up all the furs they can get. Some allowance must be made for national prejudice and French pertness. F.

added, that in his country they spoke to their enemies with the club in their hands, as soon as *the hatchet is dug up*; a phrase which denotes, that nobody ought to have any commerce or correspondence with the enemy, directly or indirectly, under any pretence whatsoever, after war is declared, unless he will prove a traitor to his country, and be punished accordingly.

When peace is concluded they bury the hatchet or the club under ground, signifying thereby that all their hatred towards their enemies is buried in oblivion, that the horrors of war are at an end, and that friendship and good understanding are growing again between them and their friends, like the white flowers of their tree of peace, (which is the white laurel), that ought to spread its branches over the *white ground*; which is a metaphorical expression which means the ground of peace.

The cacique I mentioned before, is called *Tamathlemingo*, and he is very warm in the French interest. I know that he has scornfully rejected the presents which some Englishmen would have loaded him with, and he had a great mind to break their heads for making him such a proposition. He wears a silver medal fastened round

round his neck by a leather thong. He often told me, he would be buried together with the image of his father (that is, the king's portrait) which he wears on his breast; and having always been faithful to him he hoped to shake hands with him in the land of the souls, where he expected to see him one day. After this worthy chief had shewn me these fine sentiments which parted from his heart, I gave him a bottle of brandy to drink the health of his father and mine. Such little *douvoirs* when given on proper occasions, have a great effect upon these people; thus they were greatly moved when I pulled off my shirt and gave it them in the name of their father, telling them that he pitied them, because he knew by means of the *speaking substance*\* that his children were naked.

These nations have no idea of the political systems which are known among the European powers. In their opinion, the allies of a nation must assist them, when they are in war, and have no correspondence with their enemies. I have had a long and serious conference with one *Allent Mingo*, who is a juggler and likewise the chief of a district among them, and pretends to have  
been

---

\* Paper, or letters.



been abused by some *Spanish* soldiers of the garrison of *Pensacola*: This Indian owned that he had formed a design in order to be revenged of them; to make a general incursion with his warriors into *Florida*, to the very gates of *Pensacola*. This Indian would pay me a compliment, and make me approve of his design, by telling me, that he was partly drawn into it, because the Spaniards lay still upon their mats; i. e. they were at peace with the English; whom they received into their ports, though at that time, they were our enemies.

I answered this discourse of the Cacique in express terms and such as were most capable of making him desist from his enterprize, as I was willing to prevent a massacre of the Spaniards who were our allies and neighbours: accordingly I spoke to him in a manner analogous to the genius and character of the nation.

*Alexi Mingo*, said I, prepare thy heart, open thy ears to hear the force of my words, for it will bring back to thee thy wits, which thou hast lost to-day.

I tell thee, then that the grand chief sovereign of the *Spaniards*, who lives on the other  
side

side of the great salt-water lake, in the old world that swarms with inhabitants is the brother of the father of the red men; i. e. of the king of *France*, and accordingly, I must say, I disapprove very much of thy bold design. I fairly declare to thee, that if thou persistest in it, thou canst do no better than to begin with breaking my head. The *Cacique* answered, “Thy blood is as dear to me as my own; besides, the *French* have never done me any harm, and I am ready to give my life for them; thou canst assure our father of that. Oh that I had the speaking substance which thou hast, to let him know my words, but no, I rather wish I had a hundred mouths which he might hear †.”

After this protestation of friendship he gave me his *Cabmet*, and when I had smoked a little I returned it to him, as having made peace for the *Spaniards*, by whom he pretended to have been ill-used; and as a ratification I gave him a bot-

VOL. I.

R

tle

---

\* The Indians call their allies brothers.

† Some time after the author's departure, the Indians of these parts massacred several Englishmen, that were come within two leagues of fort *Toulouse*, where *M. de Grand-Maison* then commanded, who is now Major of the troops at *New Orleans*.

tle of the fiery water, that is of brandy, saying, this I give thee to clean thy mouth, that it may not utter any more bad words against the Spaniards our allies: and to strengthen my discourse I gave a great roll of tobacco, for his warriors to smoke out of the great *Calumet* of peace. After my harangue was at an end, the young people came one after another to squeeze me by the hand, as a mark of friendship, which is customary among them.

I wished, however, to persuade this Cacique, who was piqued at the Spaniards, who receive English vessels at *Pensacola*, because they are at peace: for he said they came to inform themselves of the situation and strength of these coasts.

By way of appeasing the Indian, I told him, that the governor daily waited for the arrival of a great piragua\*, which should bring him some of the speaking substance, wherein the great chief of the Spaniards should order him to dig up the hatchet of war, and to lift up his club against the English.

This

---

\* An European ship.

This discourse satisfied my Cacique; and as he had drank a good portion of brandy, he was very talkative, and I took the opportunity of questioning him concerning the grudge he bore the *Spaniards* in *Florida*. He told me, that he had heard by tradition, that the first *warriors of fire*\* who came into this country had committed hostilities in it, and violated the law of nations; and, that ever since that period, the ancestors of his nation had always recommended it to their posterity to revenge the blood which had been unjustly shed. I told the juggling Cacique, that the Lord of life had revenged them sufficiently, by the death of *Ferdinand Soto*, and almost all his warriors.

I added, that they had no further reason to hate the *Spaniards*; that *Philip II.* grand chief of the *Spaniards*, had disavowed all the mischief which his generals had done in these climates, as being contrary to his intentions.

R 2

I told

---

\* History inform us, that in 1544, *Ferdinand Soto* made incursions into this country; the Indians there, who had never seen any Europeans, called the *Spaniards* warriors of fire, because they were armed with guns and pistols: they said, that the cannon was thunder, and that it caused the earth to tremble, by killing people at a great distance.

I told this American prince part of the story of *Don Francis de Toledo*, viceroy of *Peru*, who publicly hanged the presumptive heir to the crown, and ordered all the princes of the royal family of the *Yncas* to be killed, not even excepting the Spaniards, who from their mother's side were descended from *Atahualipa*. *Don Francis*, after such an execution, expected to be raised to the greatest dignities of the state on his return to Spain; but he was very ill received by the grand chief of the nation, who ordered him with a harsh voice to get out of his presence, saying, I have not appointed thee to be the executioner of princes, but to serve me and assist the unhappy. These words struck the viceroy dumb, and caused him such an illness that he died a few days after. The same king caused the death of one of his ministers that had imposed upon him, merely by saying the word *Hoolabè*, which in the Indian language, signifies, *What, dost thou lye?* The Cacique very gravely replied, "But if the grand chief  
 " of the men of fire, appeared, as thou  
 " sayest, so angry at the viceroy, on account  
 " of the cruelties which he had com-  
 " mitted against his will, why did he not put  
 " him

“ him in the frame \* ? or why did he not cut off  
 “ his head, and send it back to *Peru* ? This  
 “ example of severity and justice would in part  
 “ have satisfied the people whom this general  
 “ had ill-treated, by hanging on a gibbet, like  
 “ a thief, the heir of a great empire, who de-  
 “ pended only from the *Lord of life*, or the Su-  
 “ preme Being. Thus we red men, whom the  
 “ Europeans call savages and barbarians would  
 “ act towards the wicked and the murderers,  
 “ who ought to be treated like the fiercest beasts  
 “ of the forest.”

I again replied to this Indian chief in the fol-  
 lowing terms, “ Thou must know that the  
 “ grand chiefs of the white men that live in the  
 “ old country, are despotic and absolute, and  
 “ that when they drive from their presence their  
 “ generals or warriors, who have abused their sub-  
 “ jects without cause, this affront is much more  
 “ sensibly felt by those proud chiefs, who are  
 “ hated by the *Great Spirit*, or by God, on ac-  
 “ count of their misdeeds, than the punishment

R 3

“ of

---

\* A punishment which the Indians adjudge to those that  
 have committed cruelties, and are taken at war: they are put  
 into a kind of frame, composed of two posts, and a pole  
 laid across them, and burnt alive.

“ of the frame, or a hundred blows with the club upon the head, would be by a red man.”

At last I succeeded in softening the hatred which these people had conceived against the *Spaniards*, and I imagine every hostile intention is suppressed now; for my explication was very satisfactory to my juggler.

I believe I have already observed to you, that the Indians are very sensible of injuries, and that they generally remember those that have outraged them when they are in liquor. I have often been the mediator in order to terminate the quarrels between two Indians; I told them that they ought to live together as good brothers, forget the past, and employ their courage in the common defence of their country only. I further assured them that if they did not give ear to my words, the *Great Spirit* would be displeased with them, and make their crops of maize fail. The Indian women ran quickly to me, whenever any two were ready to fight, that I might judge between them, and I always did all I could to reconcile the parties; which pleased the women very much, who have nothing wild about them, but the name which people give

give them, and whose features are very regular. In a word, in this new world, as well as in the old, that lovely sex is born to populate and not to destroy.

What I have still to say of this nation is so ample, that I am obliged to divide it; I shall, therefore reserve their mourning and their funeral customs for another letter.

I am, S I R, &c. &c.

*Among the Allibamons the  
28th of April 1759.*

R 4

L E T.





## L E T T E R XVI.

*To the same.*

*Mourning and Manner of burying the Dead among the Allibamons ; Justice done to the Chevalier d'Erneville, for a Soldier killed by a young Indian : their Religion ; their Means of catching the Roebuck and the wild Turkies.*

S I R,

THE day before yesterday I received  
 one of your letters, which informs me  
 that you are in good health, and that  
 you continue to give me marks of your remem-  
 brance of me. In my preceding letter, I spoke  
 to you of the marriage of the Indians ; I shall  
 now proceed to describe their mourning. When  
 a grand chief of the nation dies, this mourning  
 consists in not washing nor combing themselves ;  
 the men daub their whole body with foot, mixed  
 up

up with bear's oil; and in a word, they renounce all sorts of diversions. When a woman loses her husband, she is obliged to be in mourning for a whole year, and to lay aside all her ornaments.

All the *Allibamons* drink the *Cassine*\*; this is the leaf of a little tree, which is very shady; the leaf is about the size of a farthing, but dentated on its margins. They toast these leaves as we do coffee, and drink the infusion of them, with great ceremony. When this diuretic potion is prepared, the young people go to present it in calabashes formed into cups, to the chiefs and warriors, that is the honourables, and afterwards to the other warriors, according to their rank and degree. The same order is observed when they present the Calumet to smoke out of: whilst you drink they howl as loud as they can, and diminish the sound gradually; when you have ceased drinking, they take their breath, and when you drink again, they set up their howls again. These sorts of orgies sometimes last from six in the morning to two o'clock  
in

---

\* This is the *Prinos glaber* of Linnæus. Sp. pl. p. 471. and *Cassena vera Floridanorum*. Catesby's Carol. 2. t. 57.

in the afternoon. The Indians find no inconveniencies from this potion, to which they attribute many virtues, and return it without any effort.

The women never drink of this beverage, which is only made for the warriors. In such assemblies, where they are never admitted, the Indians tell their news and deliberate on political affairs, concerning peace or war. However the Chevalier *d'Erneville*, says that he saw a woman, who was the grand chief's wife, go in, because she was a female warrior, and had a quick, penetrating mind. Her opinion sometimes prevailed in the conclusion of treaties.

The *Allibamons* love the French very much; there is an agreement on both sides, that if a *Frenchman* kills one of the *Indians*, he must die, and the same if an *Indian* kills a *Frenchman*; the last accident happened whilst the Chevalier *d'Erneville* commanded the fort at the *Allibamons*; a young Indian shot a soldier of the garrison, and disappeared immediately. As the officer did not know where the criminal was, he applied to the chiefs of the nation, saying, they must do him justice. They answered, that the young man had taken refuge with another nation; the Che-  
valier

*valier d'Erville* did not put up with this excuse ; he told them that the dead man called for vengeance, and that blood ought to be avenged by blood, as is their expression ; that the murderer had a mother, and that she ought to suffer in his stead. They answered, that she had not killed the man ; but the officer replied, that he spoke like the red man, who when somebody killed a person of their nation, and they had not justice done them for it, were revenged upon some person of the nation of the murderer. He lastly represented it to them, that in order to keep the good understanding between the white and the red men, they ought not to oppose the punishment of the criminal. They offered him a great quantity of furs, and even horses loaded with booty. This officer who is known for his zeal in preferring the king's interest to his own, and the honour of the nation to his fortune, refused all these presents. He added, that he had not been able to sleep since the death of his warrior, who called every night to him, *avenge my blood*. The poor Indians, seeing they could not move him, held a council and sent out eight men, conducted by a young chief of the warriors. He went immediately with his men to the murderer's mother, and told her that since her son was not to be found, she must die in his stead.

stead. The poor woman suffered herself to be led away, and was all in tears; her relations followed her with very sad countenances; one of them seeing there was no pardon to be hoped for, said to the chief of the troop, "*My mother-in-law dies through courage, as she has not struck the blow.*" He proposed they should wait whilst he went to fetch the murderer; he actually brought him into the assembly, where the Chevalier *d'Erneville* was, and said, See, there is the guilty man, do what you please with him. The officer answered, that they ought to do him justice; and they immediately killed him †.

### Justice

---

\* Thus the Indians execute justice; there is no need of drawing up cases; all these forms are unknown; the law is, that he who has killed must be killed again, unless it be by accident, as in a drunkenness, in a fit of madness, or in their exercises,

† The relation of this story, is by no means favourable to the French. They acted upon a barbarous and cruel principle, by bringing the mother of the guilty man to a punishment which she did not deserve; and had not her son on this occasion preferred filial duty to self-preservation, the French Chevalier would have committed an inhuman action, by inflicting death on an innocent person. *The Indians*

Justice being thus done, the chief harangued the young people, and recommended it very strongly to them, to keep their hands from the  
*French,*

---

*dians* act upon principle, by avenging the death of their countrymen upon any other person of the nation to which the murderer belongs ; for, on account of their confined ideas, and ignorance, they think the same constitution and manners take place among the Europeans, as are usual among themselves ; and as they look upon their whole nation as a body of brethren, and a single family, they are, therefore, of opinion that all the Europeans must be answerable for the death of one of their brethren. But as the Europeans boast to be civilized, instructed and Christians, they ought to act according to the principles of their religion ; the knowledge and instruction they enjoy, and their own constitution ; all these oblige them to shew the Indians, by their example, the superiority of their religion, knowledge and constitution ; make them sensible, that if they acted like Indians they would commit an open injustice ; and to enforce the return of such actions in similar cases. The Europeans instead of instilling principles of humanity into the minds of the poor Indians, very frequently scandalize them by their uncharitable and barbarous manners ; and thus the high refinements of our manners, our boasted civilization, our pride, founded upon the superiority of our knowledge, and that real great advantage of being instructed in a religion founded upon reason and charity, instead of bringing our immortal minds to that pitch of excellence they are capable of, according to the true intention of these advantages, prove only our deep corruption, and the wilful depravity of our hearts, and I may say, the barbarity of our manners. F.

*French*; and added, that as often as they should lose their senses and kill our people, they would do us the same justice again.

The Chevalier *d'Erneville* held a speech to the assembly in his turn, and made the nation a present which the governor had sent him. The Indians gave him the great calumet of peace to smoke, all the soldiers and *French* inhabitants likewise smoked it, in sign of a general amnesty; afterwards they drank the *Cassine*, which is the potion of the *white word*, i. e. the potion of oblivion and peace.

Since that time this nation has never offended us. The *Allibamons* offered, in 1714, to build upon their ground, and at their expence, a fort, which was afterwards called *Fort Toulouse*, and they introduced the *French* into it. M. de *Bienville*, who was then governor, went to take possession of it in the King's name\*.

They

---

\* This governor is in such great esteem with them, that they always mention him in their harangues. His name is so deeply graven in the hearts of these good Indians, that his memory will always be dear to them. As soon as they saw me they inquired after him; I answered, that he was at the great village, or *Paris*, in good health, with which they were highly pleased.

They never would permit the *English* to do the like; they pay no regard to the menaces of the King of *England*; every Cacique or chief of a village thinks himself a sovereign, who only depends upon the *Master of life*, or the *Great Spirit*.

The *Attabamons* have called their country the *white country*, or land of peace; and repose on their mats, that is, *they attack no body*; which is a kind of allegory by which they seem to tell all the nations on earth, that the murdering hateher is buried, and that they may come to trade with them in safety.

The following is an harangue which I heard one of the chiefs of this nation hold: “ Young  
 “ men and warriors, do not disregard the *Ma-*  
 “ *ster of life*; the sky is blue, the sun is with-  
 “ out spots, the weather is fair, the ground is  
 “ white, every thing is quiet on the face of the  
 “ earth, and the blood of men ought not to be  
 “ spilt on it. We must beg the spirit of peace  
 “ to preserve it pure and spotless among the na-  
 “ tions that surround us. We ought only to  
 “ spend our time in making war with tygers,  
 “ bears, wolves, stags, and roe-bucks, in order  
 “ to have their skins, with which we may trade  
 “ with



“ with the Europeans, who will bring us what  
 “ we want, in order to maintain our women and  
 “ children.”

The Americans in general have no knowledge of letters. The art of writing is unknown to them. They are surprised to see that one can converse with another at a great distance by a paper; and they look upon the missive letters with admiration. When they are trusted with letters, they bring them very exactly to the persons they are directed to; and though it should rain ever so hard, and they had a great many rivers to pass, those letters are never wetted. The *Allibamons* trade with the *French, English, and Spaniards*, but they do not love the latter much; they make war upon them sooner than upon any other nation, on account of their cruelties towards the *Mexicans*; their memory is admirable, they always remember the wrong which is done to them.

Those whom I speak of here acknowledge a Supreme Being, whom they call *Soulbieche*. I asked them what they thought of the other world; and they answered, that if they have not taken another man's wife, or if they have not robbed nor killed any one during their life; they

they shall go after their death into a very fertile country, where they shall want neither wives nor proper places for hunting, and that every thing will be easy to them there; but that on the contrary, if they have behaved themselves foolishly, and disregarded the great Spirit, they will come into a barren land full of thorns and briars, where there will be no hunting, and no wives. This is all I have been able to learn concerning the belief of these people of another life.

The *Allibamons* bury their dead in a sitting posture; in order to justify this custom they say, that man is upright, and has his head turned towards heaven, which is to be his habitation. They give to them a calumet, and some tobacco to smoke, that they may make peace with the inhabitants of the other world. If the corpse be of a warrior, he is buried with his arms, which are a musket, some powder and bullets, a quiver full of arrows, a bow, and an hatchet or club; and besides these a mirror\*, and some vermilion with which they may dress themselves in the other world.

VOL. I.

S

When

---

\* The young Indians are never without a little hatchet or a mirror hung on their wrist.

When a man kills himself, either in despair or in a sickness, he is deprived of burial, and thrown into the river, because he is looked upon as a coward.

I have already said, that the Indians must support misfortunes with heroic constancy. Their enthusiasm prompts them to make songs of death when they are taken prisoners, and destined to be burnt; on such an occasion an Indian says: "I fear neither death nor fire, make me suffer ever so much, because my nation will revenge my death." This occasions his enemies either to accelerate his fate, or sometimes adopt him, saying he is a man of courage.

When there is a disturber of public peace amongst them, the old men speak to him thus: "Thou art at liberty to go away; but remember, that if thou art killed, the nation shall disown thee; we shall not weep for thee, nor avenge thy death." So irregular a life is punished with the greatest contempt among these people, as among all others\*.

The

---

\* The young Indians sometimes ramble into the neighbouring villages, and carry off the women; these kinds of rapes

The Indians generally set out a hunting towards the end of October. The *Allibamons* go sixty, eighty, and sometimes an hundred leagues from their villages, and they take their whole families with them into their piraguas: they do not return till March, which is the time of sowing their corn-grounds. They bring back many furs, and a great quantity of dried flesh. When they are returned into their villages, they regale their friends, and make presents to the old men, who have not been able to go with them, and have kept in the huts during the time of the great hunt.

These nations have singular methods of catching the roe-deer; an Indian takes the head of a roe-buck, and dries it; he then carries it with him into the woods, where he covers his back with the skin of this animal, he puts his hand into the neck of the dried head, taking care to put little hoops under the skin to keep it firm on the hand; he then kneels down, and in that at-

S 2 . . . . . titude,

---

rapes occasion the wars among the different tribes; for they fight not for land, having more of that than they can cultivate. It is a capital crime among the Indians to carry off another man's wife; if it is the Cacique's wife, the whole nation is obliged to avenge the affront offered to their chief.

titude, mimicking the voice of these creatures, he shews the head; the roe-deer are deceived by it, and come very near the hunters, who are sure to kill them.

There are Indians who, by means of this stratagem, have destroyed four hundred roe-deer in one winter's hunting. They employ very nigh the same trick to get the wild turkies in the woods; some of them put the skins of these birds on their shoulders, and on the heads a bit of scarlet or other red cloth, which is agitated by the wind, and whilst the birds look at them, their comrades kill them with arrows; they do not use fire-arms, for fear of frightening them, and whilst there are any turkies on a tree, they continue to shoot them with great dexterity; these birds are commonly foolish enough to expect the return of their fellows who fell down; the Indians have often treated me with these birds, and I found them excellent during autumn.

The Indians are likewise very dextrous fishermen; they neither employ hooks nor nets; they take reeds, which are very common along the sides of rivers, dry them near the fire, or in the sun-shine, sharpen one end like a dart, and fasten

en

en a cord made of the bark of a tree, to the other end; when they are upon the lakes in their canoes, they throw this dart or harpoon into the water at the fish, and draw it up again by means of the cord; others shoot the fish with a bow and arrows, and when they have wounded a fish, it comes to the surface of the water.

Before I have done with the *Allibamons*, I should not forget to tell you, that in July, when their harvest begins, they have a great feast. That solemn day they pass without eating; they light a new fire for physic, as they call it, or juggling, after which they take a purge, and offer to their *Manitou* the firstlings of their fruit: they finish the day in religious dances.

This nation has likewise jugglers or quacks; I shall relate to you a very droll adventure which happened to me with one of them. As I was going up the river of *Allibamons*, a quack and juggler came to see me with several Indians, men and women. He asked for some brandy, I gave him a bottle full of it, which he drank with his companions. He asked me for some more, but I told him I had no more; he would not believe me, and seeing that he could not get any thing, he thought he would intimidate

me, by telling me he was a magician, and would *practise physick*\* against me, if I gave him no brandy; *i. e.* he would enchant my boat, so that it could not proceed. I told him I feared him not; that I was a physician myself. This word astonished my adversary.

This pretended magician told me to shew him the effects of my art; I answered, that he ought to begin, but he replied that I should do it being a stranger; at last, after many debates, I began to make ridiculous gestures, and looked into a book which the juggler understood nothing of; I bid him retire, and leave me alone, it being the custom of the jugglers, by which means they conceal their impostures from the other Indians. I had the skin of a tyger-cat, the flesh and bones of which had been extracted through an incision in the neck; I gave this skin to the Indian quack, telling him to restore its sight, and make the creature go about. He answered, that he could not do it; I see, said I, thou art a mere novice in this art, I shall perform it.

I must

---

\* This is an expression which the Indians make use of, denoting the application of their slight-of-hand tricks, and grimaces intended for to make their countrymen believe that they are magicians or conjurers.

I must previously inform you, that, in my last voyage, I brought with me from France enamelled eyes, which perfectly imitated the natural eyes; a thing which the Indians here had never seen; I fastened them with the resin of firs, in the place of those which were wanting in the skin, into which I afterwards put and confined a living squirrel, with its head towards the neck of the tyger-cat; a soldier whom I had instructed was quite ready with a club; every thing being thus prepared, I opened the door of the cabin, and the Indians advanced, with the juggler or quack doctor at their head. I held the cat in my arms, and the squirrel jumped about in it, which immediately surpris'd my pretended magician; he cried out that I was a true *physician* or forcerer, because I had brought to life, restored to sight, and made dead cats walk. When the other Indians had well considered it in my arms, I let it go on the ground, pricking the squirrel with a pin, which made it run with the cat's skin towards the spectators, who thought it would devour them; they went backwards, and the women, through a natural fear, ran from my boat, declaring that I was a forcerer. I then ran to my tyger-cat, seeming to be very angry with it, I quickly took out the squirrel and the glass-eyes, then pressing the teeth in the



cat's head against my stomach, I cried out as if the creature had bit me, flinging it on the ground immediately; the soldier whom I had armed with a club, strikes at the revived tyger-cat, in order to kill it for having revolted against its master, and for having been willing to attack red men, who were our friends and allies.

After this comic scene, I gave the skin to the Indian juggler, and desired him to make it revive as I had done. He owned, that my art was above the reach of his. I then bid him enchant my boat to prevent its going on; but he answered, that one physician against another could do nothing; that I was his master in the art, and he an ignorant fellow\*. All the savages

---

\* The Indians repose a great confidence in their doctors; the juggler's hut is covered with furs, with which he covers and dresses himself. He goes in quite naked, and begins with pronouncing some words which no body understands; they are, as he says, to invoke the Spirit; after that he rises, cries, agitates himself, appears quite frantick, and gets into a profound sweat †.

The hut shakes, and the spectators believe it is done through the presence of the Spirit; the language which he speaks on this occasion, has nothing in common with the ordinary Indian language; it is nothing but the ravings of a hot

vages who were out upon the winter hunt along the river, brought me provisions of roe-deer and turkies, that I might begin again to play off my trick; but for fear of being discovered, and to preserve my reputation, I said I could  
not

---

hot imagination, which these quacks have imposed upon their countrymen as a divine language; thus the most cunning people have always deceived the rest.

† The heathen nations in the Russian empire have exactly such jugglers or conjurors as are here described. In the government of *Cazan* are the *Tcheremisses*, the *Tchuwashes*, and the *Wotiaks*, three nations; the first of which call their conjurors *Mushan*, the second *Yomnas* or *Yymnas*, and the third *Tona* or *Tuno*; they are of both sexes, and make the same grimaces as these American jugglers. In *Siberia* the *Tungust*, the *Yakuti*, and the *Byrati*, call their conjurors *Shamans*, and they perform the same tricks, and make many antic gestures at their pretended conjurations. Their dress is on these occasions likewise very remarkable, sometimes ornamented with the fangs and talons of beasts and birds of prey, sometimes hung with such a terrible quantity of several pieces of iron, as will both make the robe very heavy, and cause a great rattling noise at the least motion of the conjuror's body. The more we go east in *Siberia*, the more common is this kind of conjurors, and the more striking is the likeness between the savage inhabitants of *North America*, and the savage Nomadic nations of the north-east parts of *Asia*. Some more hints of this similarity are pointed out in a note to *Kalm's Travels into North America*, vol. III. p. 126. F.

not do it over again, lest some one of them should be devoured by the revived creature, and the better to convince them, I shewed them the marks of the animal's teeth on my stomach. They then approved very much of what I had said, and thanked me for interesting myself so much for them, as to expose myself generously to prevent the furious revived tyger-cat from killing their women and children; they added, that I had done well to reduce it to its lifeless state, in order to make it an example to others, because it was an evil spirit; these poor people regard the French as supernatural men.

It is sometimes dangerous to be a doctor; for if some one dies among the Indians, they attribute his death to the physic, and not to the incurable disposition of the patient; therefore I would never advise any body to abuse the credulity of these people. I likewise told them, that since I had been bitten I had abjured the office of a magician, and that I knew no other physician than the *Master of life*, whose aid they ought to implore; that he was as much the father of the red men as of the white men, who are their elder brothers.

The

The pretended resurrection of my tyger-cat, however, gave me great reputation among the quacks or jugglers of this country, and even among those of Spanish *Florida*, whose natural curiosity led them to pay me a visit; they joined the *Allibamons* doctors, and begged me to perform the same piece of legerdemain which I had done on my voyage: I told them, I was sorry that I could not satisfy their curiosity, because I had struck the post\*; however, that I might not send them away discontented, I told them, that their presence was very agreeable to me, that the *Grand Chief* of the French and the father of the Indians was contented with their nation, and with them in particular; that the doctors having more knowledge than the others, both in the art of curing the sick, and in their zeal towards inspiring their countrymen with fidelity and friendship for the French, it was on that consideration I come on purpose to bring them a present, which was the word of their father, and that M. *Aubert* had orders from the governor to divide it among them.

I further told them, that as I was glad to get acquainted with them, and to converse with them,

---

\* The Indian manner of swearing is to strike against a post with a club,

them, I wished they would tell me their proper names. As these people are neither baptised nor circumcised, they commonly take the name of some animal, such as bear, wolf, fox, &c. The gravity which I affected, in order to command the respect of these Indian doctors, made them ask me, whether I wrote their names in order to give an account of them to their father, by means of the speaking paper? to which I answered, that it was for that very purpose.

When I had written down their names, I sometimes made use of them in order to pass for a fortune-teller.

I shut myself up in the hut of one of the doctors, and a soldier, to whom I had told the number of letters which composed each name, put his hand on the shoulder of the juggler, and with a little rod struck him as many times as there were letters in his name; I being within easily guessed what man my soldier laid his hands upon; and so on with all the rest. They could not comprehend how I could guess so well without seeing them, and they owned that it went beyond their imagination.

The

The *Sieur Godeau*, chief surgeon and keeper of the magazine at the fort of *Allibamons*, had already before me practised physic in the presence of the Indians, who were looking at a little phial full of mercury; after looking at it with attention, they told him they wished to have it. He said he would give it them, but that he wanted the phial; he poured out the quicksilver immediately on the ground, and bid them take it up; they could never do it, for it rolled away on all sides; the astonished savages called it a spirit which divided itself into several parts, which being collected together formed only one body; but their astonishment was much greater when the *Sieur Godeau* took up all the mercury with a card, and put in the phial again, in their presence, which none of them had been able to do. This surgeon did more, he poured *aqua-fortis* upon it, which dissolved it, and made it disappear entirely; since that time the Indians have revered him as a great doctor.

*M. de Montberaut* has put the command of the fort of the *Allibamons* into the hands of *M. Aubert*, who is adjutant of the fort *Mobile*. I take the liberty to write to the governor, in order to represent it to him with all respect, that being the senior officer of that gentleman, I could not stand

stand here under his orders; that he might not be further obliged to do any services foreign to his function \*, the King's order concerning that particular being very explicit; that as our institution is founded upon honour, I should think I would derogate from that which I had acquired in the King's service, if I did not make the observations of a soldier, whose zeal for the service he knows; that it was very natural for me to think, that by this consideration he would think himself obliged to let me enjoy the emoluments annexed to my place, otherwise I should beg him to recall me to *New Orleans*, that I might seize the first opportunity of setting out for Europe, where I should have the pleasure of assuring you that I am, S I R, &c.

*At the Allibamons, the 2d  
of May 1759.*

P. S. I

---

\* I must, however, do M. *Aubert* justice; he has had the command of the fort at the *Allibamons* to my prejudice, but I must praise the regard he has had for me, in offering to divide the authority, and to live upon the footing of a friend with me.

P. S. I have forgot to mention to you a visit which the emperor of the *Kawytas* has paid us some time after M. *de Montberaut's* departure. As we had advice of it by a courier, I went to meet his Indian majesty in order to receive him at some distance from the fort. I had posted some soldiers, who fired their muskets by way of signal to the gunners to fire the cannon at the moment, when the prince should put his hand in mine \*: he was mounted on a Spanish horse, with an English saddle, and with a housing of a tyger's skin †.

This emperor marched gravely at the head of his attendants; I could hardly keep from laughing, on seeing tall well made naked men, painted with all kinds of colours, follow each other in a file, according to their rank, like so many Capuchin friars.

The Indian prince appeared enraptured with the honours that were shewn him; he had never

---

\* The Indians are without compliments and ceremonies, they laugh at our bows, or method of saluting with the body bent, and the foot advanced forwards or retreated backwards.

† American leopard.

\* *Cowetas?*



never seen cannons, and called them great muskets.

He wore on his head a crest of black plumes; his coat was scarlet, with *English* cuffs on it, and beset with tinsel lace; he had neither waistcoat nor breeches, but only an apron made of a bit of scarlet cloth, which was taken up between the thighs and fastened to his girdle. Under his coat he had a white linen shirt; his feet were covered with a kind of buskins, of tanned roe-deer skins, which were died yellow. As he was a young man, of eighteen or nineteen years old, his nation had appointed a noble and wise old man as a regent; he held a speech in his sovereign's name, and he presented the calumet of peace to *M. Aubert*, who told him after the first compliments were over, that he should go to rest, it being the custom among the Indians, not to speak of political affairs till the next day, in order to have time to make reflections.

The *Sieur Laubéne*, the king's interpreter, translated the discourse of the regent, who likewise acted as the emperor's chancellor; he did not fail to call to mind the great services which his late father had done to the French, and that  
 them,

the son had always been willing to come to see them, in order to renew the friendship, which had never ceased to exist between his nation and ours, and to smoke the same calumet with them.

It is true, his predecessor always was inviolably attached to *M. de Bienville*, and the latter granted that Cacique the title of emperor on that account.

The governor likewise desired to bring all the tribes of *Allibamons* to acknowledge the emperor as their grand chief; but they refused it saying, that it was quite sufficient that every village was subjected to a chief: in a word, they would change nothing in their form of government.

The emperor, his regent, his chief of war or general, his doctor or juggler, and his hired servant appeared at ten o'clock in the morning before our commander, where we all were dressed in our uniforms in order to compose a kind of court for him. As to the emperor, his imperial habit was no better this day than that of his attendants, for they all were

dressed as Adam was in the terrestrial paradise \*.

This young prince had a noble shape, and a handsome appearance; he was sprightly and graceful; during his stay here he has been treated at the king's expence. As he was of my size, the governor of the fort begged me to give him a blue coat, and a gold laced waistcoat, a hat with plumes, and a shirt with laced ruffles.

M. *Aubert* likewise made some trifling presents to this American prince, and to the officers of his court, at the king's expence, and sent them home very well satisfied.

Their country is situated between *Carolina* and *East Florida*, eastward of *Mobile*; these people have never been conquered by the *Spaniards*, who are become their declared enemies. The emperor always dined at M. *Aubert's* table, with his regent. The others had not the same honour  
done

---

\* The coat which the emperor had on when he arrived at the *Allibamons*, had been given him by a captain in the king of Great-Britain's army. He laid it by on this public day, through political views, and in order to get one from the French.

done them, in order to inspire them with a greater regard for the *French* officers. I must tell you, that the son of that noble *Karuytas* whom the French had honoured with the pompous title of emperor, was very much at a loss the first time he dined with us; for he had never made use of a fork before; therefore he looked at us very attentively, in order to imitate our way of eating. His regent had not the same patience, he took the breast and back bone of a turkey and broke it with his fingers, saying, that the *Master of life* had made them before the knives and forks were made.

Towards the end of the repast we had a little farce with the hired servant of the Emperor, who stood behind his Indian majesty during dinner; this fellow observing that we eat mustard with our boiled meat, asked *M. de Boudin* what it was that we seemed to relish so much; as this officer speaks the language of the nation, having lived forty years among them, he answered, that the French were by no means covetous of what they possessed; the Indian immediately took a spoonful of mustard, which being very strong, forced him to make many ridiculous contortions, which made his master burst out laughing; his servant was far from

T 2

laughing

laughing; for he thought he was poisoned; M. *Aubert* ordered a bottle of brandy to be brought and bid him take a good draught, assuring him that he would be cured immediately.

The *Kawytas* are very reserved towards strangers in matters of religion; they never speak in public till they have reflected sufficiently on what they are going to say.

These people annually hold a general assembly in the principal village of their nation; there is a great hut for that purpose, in which every one takes place according to his rank, and has a right to speak in his turn\*; according to his age, abilities, wisdom, and the services he has done his country.

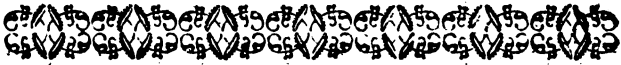
The grand chief of the tribe opens the session by a speech, which concerns the history or tradition of their country; he tells the military exploits of his ancestors, who have distinguished themselves in defence of their country, exhorting his subjects to imitate their virtues, in supporting the wants and miseries of human life  
with

---

\* The Indians disapprove of the European habit of speaking all together in an assembly.

with patience, and above all, without complaining against the *Great Spirit, who is the Lord of the life of every being here on earth*; and in enduring adversity with courage, and lastly in sacrificing every thing to the love of their country and of liberty; it being a thousand times more glorious to die as a man, than to live as a vile slave.

The chief having ceased speaking, the oldest among the nobles rises, salutes his sovereign, and harangues with his body naked to his girdle; he is all over in a sweat, on account of the heat which his action and declamation throws him into; his gestures are natural, and his metaphors explain his mind: he persuades his audience into a belief of all that he says, by his eloquence, and the excellence of his discourse. Nothing is more edifying than these assemblies; you hear no prattling, no indecency, no ill-timed applause and no immoderate laughter there. The young men are very reserved and attentive to hear the words of the old men, being persuaded that it is for their good.



## L E T T E R XVII.

*To the same.*

*The Author leaves the Allibamons. His Navigation in the River of Tombekbé. How he escapes the voraciousness of an Alligator. He meets with a Party of revolted Chaftaws, and brings them to their Duty again. He returns to Mobile.*

S I R,

INSTEAD of an answer to the letter  
 I which I had wrote to the governor, I  
 received an order at the *Allibamons* to  
 go to Mobile, and serve there under the orders  
 of M. de Velle, the king's lieutenant in that  
 place; thus in stead of going to *France* as I had  
 told you, I have got orders to command a con-  
 voy of provisions and ammunition to the fort  
 Tom-

*Tombekbé*, which is situated on a river of the same name, this station is about ten leagues from the nation of *Chactaws*, I have followed my instructions with the greatest exactness, and to the entire satisfaction of my superiors; the letters and certificate which I can shew up, are proofs of it.

I left *Mobile* on the 20th of August 1759, with three boats, in which were soldiers and *Mobile* Indians: the latter offer themselves to help the French in rowing, for some trifle or other which is given them.

You embark in the river *Mobile*, and after going up about fifteen leagues, you come to a place called la *Fourche* (i. e. the fork) that is the juncture of two rivers which fall into the *Mobile*, viz. the river of *Allibamons* and the river *Tombekbé*; I entered into the last on the 27th of August, in order to go up to the fort; we were in the fine season, and I had chosen a very proper place for a camp on the banks of a river; the Indians having had good success in fishing thereabouts, made me a present of a *barbel*, a fish of about four feet long, which they commonly dry. The weather being fair, I did not chuse to pitch my tent, but only sat down by myself

T 4

upon



upon a kind of plat-form covered with green sods, which overlooked the river, thinking that place the most convenient for resting : I spread the bear's skin taken in my pretended government, and wrapped myself up in my tent, covering my face with it, because the vapours at night are dangerous in this season ; this little nicety was near costing very dear to me as you shall see.

I had put my fish at my feet, lest it should be stolen ; but it happened worse. I had already slept for a whole hour very quietly, for the inhabitants of these parts are our allies and friends, when all of a sudden, I found myself carried away by an extraordinary force, I awoke immediately, believing some one was playing me a trick ; I assure you I never was more frightened, and I believe that a thing of less consequence will often have the same effect ; I thought the devil was carrying me off. I called for help, and the people believed that I was dreaming, or a visionary ; but how great was my surprise when I awoke. I saw an alligator (crocodile) of above twenty feet long \* ; he was  
come

---

\* His size frightened me, and I was likewise infected with the bad smell of musk which that animal carries with it.

come out of the river in the calm of night, and voracious as these creatures are, being attracted by the barbel which lay at my feet, he greedily fell upon it, and carrying it to the river he took me along by the corner of the tent in which I had wrapt myself up. I had time enough left to get out of it, at the border of the precipice, and so escaped with the fright. I only saved the bear's skin, which I never leave now. This story, plain as it is, may pass for a prodigy among those who love the marvellous.

The *Collapissas* and *Wanchas*, two little Indian nations, which live above *New Orleans*, fight with the crocodiles, or alligators, in the water in the following manner.

One takes a piece of hard wood, or of iron, and sharpens it at both ends; he takes hold of it in the middle, and swims with that one arm extended. The alligator advances with his mouth open, in order to devour the arm of the Indian, who thrusts in his hand in which he holds the piece of wood, and the alligator pierces both his jaws through with it, can neither open nor shut his mouth again, and is brought on shore, by the Indian; they often take this diversion; and

and the negroes of *Guinea* or of *Senegal* do the same.

After going up about sixty leagues between forests and mountains which confine the river; we met with such low water, that we were obliged to unload all the goods, and hide them in the woods; I only left the provisions and ammunition in the boat, and gave them all my attention. I never was in a more disagreeable situation; we were obliged to draw the boats for upwards of fifteen leagues; I put myself at the head of the soldiers and Indians, and drew at the cord, in order to set them an example. You may judge of my uneasiness, if you will consider that during this piece of work, it would have been easy to defeat and to plunder us. I met a party of revolted *Chattaws*, going to the English; I exhorted them to return; they crossed the river in a place, called in their language *Taskalouffas*, which signifies the white mountain\*; their chief, whose name is *Mingo Howmas*, had the insolence to pretend he could oblige me to give him brandy; he even was audacious enough to lift his hatchet over my head.

On

---

\* It is a kind of marle or chalk which would be of great value in Europe.

On this occasion, I told him I was a *true man*, that I feared not death, that I had given up my body \*, and was willing to die, being persuaded that if he killed me and my warriors, who were but few, the grand chief of the French, beyond the great lake, would revenge my blood on their nation, by sending as many warriors there, as there are leaves on the trees.

These men were surprised at my resolution; they said, "That I was a *man of valour*; that I "made them recover their wits which they had "lost in forming the detestable design of leaving "their father's hand, but that they hoped I "would forget what was past, because I was "very good." At the end of this harangue, they presented the calumet of peace to me, which I accepted on condition that I should smoke with a new fire out of it, to signify an eternal oblivion of what had past, and a renovation of the alliance with the *Chactaws*, children of the grand chief of the French. To convince them that I would forget the past, I told them that the fire would be produced of itself.

In

---

\* That is, devoted myself to die for my country.

In my last voyage from France I took with me a little phial of phosphorus ; I put some of this powder into the calumet of peace, and looked up to the sky in pronouncing some words addressed to the Great Spirit ; in the mean time the phosphorus being exposed to the air, set fire to the tobacco, which surpris'd, not only the Indians, but even the Frenchmen who were with me, because they had never seen the experiment tried with this powder.

After this mysterious ceremony, I made these people presents of some European trifles, and gave their chief a bottle of brandy, for it is customary among the Indians, that when you treat with them, you must give something to confirm your words. Then they all shook hands with me, and went back to their village. They told me, they were ashamed of their foolish conduct, and we separated, satisfied with each other.

Some time after this adventure, the rains were so frequent, that they swelled the water in the river very much,

As I had dispatched an Indian to *M. de Charbert*, governor of Fort *Tombekbé*, he sent me a detachment

detachment commanded by *M. de Cabaret*, a very skilful officer, who was of great service to me on this occasion, by bringing me refreshments for my soldiers, who had hardly any provisions left.

Our European coxcombs, who carry mirrors, toilets, night-gowns, &c. with them, would be looked upon as women by the Indians, and not as chiefs of the warriors: they would not distinguish themselves in those campaigns, where they must endure the excessive heats of the summer, and the rigours of winter, lie on the bare ground, and expose themselves to all the changes of weather, in order not to be surpris'd by the Indians. *Mr. Braddock*, general of *New England* in 1755, made the fatal experiment, when he came to take *Fort du Quêne*; he was massacred with his whole army at some distance from that place, by a small number of French, and some faithful Indians, led by brave *Canadian* and European officers, who did wonders of bravery in this action.

At last I happily arrived at *Fort Tombekbé* on the 25th of September, after going a hundred leagues by water, without seeing a single habitation. Every night we are obliged to camp in the  
woods.

woods upon the banks of the river; but the greatest inconvenience are the *Muskitões* or *Maringoins*, a kind of gnats which are insupportable in *Louisiana*. In order to be free from them, we put great reeds into the ground, and bent them over like arches; we then covered them with a linen cloth, and laid down a bear's skin as a matras. All the voyages made by people of the colony are done in the same manner by water.

After going on shore to camp, the commanding officer should always take care to appoint a guard, and to place sentinels in the woods to prevent surprises. The officer ought always to be very careful in chusing an advantageous situation for his camp, such as an isle or a cape.

If the *Sieur D \* \* \** had taken these precautions, when he was sent to the *Illinois* by *M. de Bienville*, in 1735, with a boat laden with gunpowder, in order to carry on the war with the *Chickaws*, he would not have been surpris'd, as he was, by a party of warriors of that nation. It may be asserted, that the neglect of that officer has been no less fatal to us, than the meanness, ignorance, and avidity of the governor of the fort of the *Natches*; this boat laden with powder,

powder, being taken by the *Chickaws*, served them to carry on the war against us for above thirty years, and caused the death of many brave men, and the loss of many millions of money to the king.

The following is, in a few words, the manner in which M. D \* \* \* was surpris'd and taken prisoner. One day when it blew a north wind, he was obliged to bring his boat to the shore, and so encamped thereon, in order to wait for better winds. He went out hunting, and his soldiers did the same in imitation of their chief; but the *Chickaws*, who had followed and watched them for a long while, took the boat with the gun-powder, and made all the soldiers in it prisoners. When M. D \* \* \* returned from hunting, he was invested and taken as his soldiers had been; but the Indians, contented with their capture, and having lost none of their people, granted them their lives; M. D \* \* \* had the good luck to escape, and returned to *New Orleans*.

When one is on a journey, he should always have an Indian scout to go before him, both for the sake of reconnoitring the enemy or preventing surpris'es, and likewise for finding out game.

It



It happened to me as I was going up the river of Tombekbé, that I was in want of provisions, but Providence supplied it visibly. The Indians, who are like ferrets in the woods, came to give me advice that they had made a good discovery; they found the nest of a great eagle, called the *royal eagle*\*; as the tree on which this nest

---

\* The eagle here called the *royal*, is called in English the *Golden Eagle*, *Penn. Br. Zool.* p. 61. tab. A. and in 8vo vol. i. p. 121. *Falco chrysaetos*, *Linn.* and *Le grand aigle royal*, *Planches enluminees*; tab. 410. Mr. Pennant relates, from *Smith's* history of Kerry, "That a poor man in that county got a comfortable subsistence for his family, during a summer of famine, out of an eagle's nest, by robbing the eaglets of the food the old ones brought." This in some measure confirms our author's account. *M. Buffon*, in his *Hist. naturelle des oiseaux*, 12mo. edit. vol. i. p. 117. attacks *M. Salerne*, for having related the account he got from a friend, who found three young eaglets of this kind in a nest, fixed between two rocks. *M. de Buffon*, though a great natural historian, is frequently subject to have his peculiar opinions, which he defends against all facts proving the contrary: and, by his eloquence, he explains away the strongest arguments; and invalidates even facts, in so much, that their strength in proving against him dwindles quite away. Our author had no peculiar opinion to favour; he must have known the bird, which is not uncommon in France, and may be seen in the menageries of the King and the nobility, and in various cabinets; and therefore I think our author's account

nest was placed, was a very tall one, they came for hatchets to cut it down; they were indeed well paid for their trouble, for they found a great quantity of game of all kinds in the nest; such as fawns, rabbits, wild turkies, grouse, partridges, and wood-pigeons, there were four eaglets in it, already pretty strong; these the Indians took for themselves, to the great sorrow of their parents, who would have picked out their eyes, if the Indians had not been armed with muskets; the poor birds were quite furious, and the eagle is very justly called the king of the birds on account of his intrepidity; but the balls did not spare their feathered majesties, who

VOL. I.

U

fell

---

account a strong proof against M. *Buffon's* opinion, that the golden eagle has no more than two eaglets, seldom three, never four. This will be a warning to all naturalists, not too much to rely upon the assertions of that French natural historian, who, with all his abilities, indulges too much his opinions, in spite of facts that are against him. I know and acknowledge the merit of this able zoologist, but as his fine language, the fine prints, the vanity of the French nation, and the present fashionable taste, have procured him a high reputation, it is no more than natural that his authority should be decisive with many, who like rather *light summer-reading*, than the heaviness of a critical discussion in natural history. I therefore thought, that such a hint might be serviceable to those whom M. *de Buffon* would carry a-stray by his florid style. F.

fell the victims of parental love. The Indians told me, that the great Spirit sent us these provisions; indeed it was to be looked upon as a *manna* sent by Providence, which favoured us in these desarts.

I have received news here from *New Orleans*, from whence my friends write, that every thing is in great confusion there, on account of an English ship which is arrived from *Jamaica*, as a smuggling vessel, commonly called there an *interloper*.

This ship is called the *Texel*, commanded by Captain *Dias-Arias*, a Jew, born an English subject. The *Ordonnateur* having found, that it ought to be confiscated according to the orders of the marine, has seized it for the King's account; *M. de Belleisle*, who is fort major, and the governor's *locum tenens*, has been requested to assist with the military for that purpose; but *M. de Kerlerec* returning from *Mobile*, has suspended *M. de Belleisle* in the performance of his functions; that governor afterwards has had *M. de Rochemore's* secretary taken up at three o'clock in the morning, by a detachment of soldiers, who, after breaking the doors and windows, dragged him out of bed, and put him on board  
a ves-

a vessel, the destination of which remains unknown: upon this *M. de Rachemore* has sent to the minister, *Monfieur de Fontenelle*, counsellor in the superior council.

When I shall be better informed of all that has happened there, I shall impart it to you; I write to the governor to grant me my recall to *New Orleans*.

I am, S I R, &c.

*At Tombekbé, the 19th of  
September 1759.*

U 2

LET-



## L E T T E R    X V I I I

*To the Same,*

*Description of the Country of the Chaſtaws. Their Wars; their Way of treating their Sick; their Superſtition; their Commerce; their Plays of Exerciſe. Country of the Tchicachas or Chickſaws, our Enemies.*

S I R,

Thought of ſetting out from hence in  
 I two days, but the deſire of knowing  
 the moſt warlike and moſt numerous  
 nation of *Louiſiana* made me change my mind; I  
 employ my leiſure hours to deſcribe what I have  
 ſeen and heard of them. The *Chaſtaws* are en-  
 tirely the friends of the *French*; they have given  
 proofs of it under the government of *M. Perrier*,  
 when they were made uſe of to puniſh the *Nat-  
 ches*

*ches* who massacred the *French* that were settled among them. The court likewise annually makes them presents to keep them in our interest. This nation can bring four thousand warriors into the field, who would march with pleasure. It would be very easy, if it was managed as carefully as it ought to be, to make them sing their songs of war, and stir them up to revenge us against the *English*, who are committing hostilities in our possessions in *Canada*; these people might on occasion serve us to great advantage, if they made incursions into the British colonies, especially the provinces of *Georgia* and *Carolina*, which are quite empty, all their troops and the national militia having been sent to the siege of *Quebec*. Many brave officers of this colony, who speak the language of the Indians, such as *M. de Rouville*, *du Tiffenet*, and others, are eager to head some parties of this nation, who could destroy the crops of our enemies, would pillage and burn their habitations, and give the alarm even to the walls of *Charles-town*, which might make a diversion in favour of *Canada*.

The *Chattaws* love war, and are acquainted with stratagems. They never fight in order, or stand their ground, they only harrass and tease their enemies much, without being cowards;

for when they come to close engagements, they fight very coolly. Some of their women are so fond of their husbands as to go into the wars with them. They stand by their sides in the battle, with a quiver full of arrows, and encourage them continually by telling them, they ought not to fear their enemies, but die as *warriors*.

The *Chactaws* are very superstitious; when they go to war they consult their *Manitou*, who is carried by the chief. They always expose him to that side where they are to go towards the enemy, and place some warriors as sentinels round him. They have such a veneration for him, that they do not eat till the chief has given him first his share.

During the continuance of the war, they obey their chief very exactly; but as soon as they return, they only consider him according to the liberality with which he disposes of his property.

It is a custom among them, that when the chief of a party of warriors has got booty from the enemy, he must distribute it to the warriors, and to the relations of those who have been kill-

ed

ed in battle, in order, as they say, *to dry up their tears*. The chief keeps nothing for himself, except the honour of being the support of the nation.

Interest, which is the cause of so many crimes in the old world, is unknown in the new world; it is not without reason that the *Cuba* Indians said, Gold is the true God of the Spaniards, and we must give it them in order to have peace. In *America* we do not see any of those men, whom we call *savages*, kill their brothers in cool blood, or make use of false witnesses to undo them, in order to get their estates. Those intrigues are unknown there, which are made use of to acquire riches, by means unworthy of a human being. No wife poisons her husband there, as is done in Europe, in order to marry again, There are no women lascivious or audacious enough publicly to declare the impotence of their husbands, as the European women do; nor does any Cacique's wife get her husband strangled, as that Neapolitan princess did with her's, because he would not satisfy her brutal passion; no girls there destroy their own offspring, in order to appear chaste in the eyes of men. The *Indian* women abhor the Christian girls who fall into that case; they oppose the



fiercest wild beasts to them, because they take great care of their young.

If the chief of a party of *Chattaws* does not succeed in the war which he has undertaken, he loses all his credit; nobody has any trust in his command, and he is obliged to come down to the rank of a mere warrior. However, admire the variety of opinions among the different nations. It is no shame, if, among these warlike people, a man turns his back upon the enemy. This desertion is attributed to a bad dream; if the chief of a great party, having dreamt that he will lose some men, tells his warriors that he has had a bad dream, they return immediately to their village; as soon as they arrive there, they have recourse to physic, *i. e.* to juggler's tricks, which they employ on all occasions; then they march towards the enemy; and if they meet him, they kill five or six of his men, and come home as content as if they had subdued a great empire.

A general who should gain a victory with the loss of many of his men, would be ill received by them; because they do not value a victory when it is bought with the blood of their friends and relations; their chiefs are always careful to preserve

- preserve their warriors, and never attack the enemy unless they are sure of an easy victory, either on account of their numbers, or their advantageous situation; but as their adversaries are likewise cunning, and evade all the snares that are laid for them, it depends then upon superior finesse; therefore they hide themselves in the woods in day-time, and only walk at night; if they are not discovered, they attack by break of day. As they are generally in a woody country, he that goes first sometimes carries a very thick bush before him, and as they all follow each other in a file, the last hides the marks of their feet, by putting the leaves on the ground on which they went in order again, so as to leave no vestiges that might betray them.

The chief things by which they discover their enemies are the smoke of their fires, which they can smell to a very great distance, and their tracks or footsteps, which they can distinguish in an incredible manner. One day an Indian shewed me, in a place where I had seen nothing, the footsteps of some *Frenchmen*, *Indians*, and *Negroes*, and the time when they had gone that way; I own that this knowledge is amazing: it may well be said, that when the *Indians* apply to any single thing, they excel in it.

Their

Their art of war consists, as you see, in vigilance; attention to prevent surprise, and to attack the enemy unprepared, in patience and strength to support hunger, thirst, the rigours of the weather, and the labours and fatigues inseparable from war.

He that has done a fine action carries the scalp of his dead enemy as a trophy, and gets the mark of it made on his body, then he mourns for him, and during that time, which lasts a month, he must not comb himself; and when his head itches, he is only allowed to scratch it with a little rod, which he ties to his wrist for that purpose.

The *Chactaws* and their wives are very uncleanly, living chiefly in places at a distance from rivers. They have no kind of religious service, they live without troubling their heads with superstition, and however believe that they have an immortal soul. They have a great veneration for their dead, whom they do not bury. When a *Chactaw* dies, his corpse is exposed upon a bier, made on purpose, of cypress bark, and placed on four posts fifteen feet high. When the worms have consumed all the flesh, the whole family assembles; some one dismembers the skeleton,

lezen, and plucks off all the muscles, nerves and tendons that still remain; they bury them and deposit the bones in a chest, after colouring the head with vermilion. The relations weep during this ceremony, which is followed by a feast, with which those friends are treated who come to pay their compliments of condolence; after that, the remains of their late relation are brought to the common burying ground, and put in the place where his ancestor's bones were deposited. During the performance of these sad ceremonies, a deep silence is observed, they neither sing nor dance, and every one goes home weeping.

In the first days of November they celebrate a great feast, which they call the feast of the dead, or of the souls; all the families then go to the burying-ground, and with tears in their eyes visit the chests which contain the relics of relations, and when they return, they give a great treat, which finishes the feast.

It may be said in praise of these *Americans*, that the friendship subsisting among the relations, a thing uncommon in *Europe*, is worthy of imitation. I have mentioned some instances of it which exceed those of antiquity. The mutual  
love

love of the *Indians* towards each other, inclines them to assist each other when they are infirm. This sincere love particularly shews itself in the last duties which they pay to their friends and relations by their tears and grief, even then, when they exist no more.

The *Indians* in general have a great veneration for their doctors or jugglers, who are real quacks, that impose upon the people, and live handsomely at their expence. They have a great authority among the *Indians*, and the latter go to them upon every occasion for their advice; they consult them as oracles. When a *Chastaw* is sick, he gives all he has in order to be cured by them; but if the patient dies, his relations attribute his death to the physic, and not to his indisposition; and can consequently kill the doctor if they have a mind to do it\*; however, this case scarce ever happens, as they generally have an excuse at hand. These doctors are, however, acquainted with several excellent plants for curing the diseases common in their country;

---

\* There are, likewise, people in *France*, who lay the death of their relations to the charge of the physician, and resemble the *Indians* very much in their thoughts on this subject.

country; they know a certain remedy for the bite of rattle snakes, and other poisonous animals.

When the *Indians* are wounded with a bullet or an arrow, the doctors or jugglers begin with sucking the wound of the patient, and spitting out the blood: they never employ lint, or tents, in their chirurgical operations; but they have the powder of a root, which they blow into the wound, to accelerate its suppuration, and they make use of another which dries and heals it; they preserve wounds from mortification, by bathing them with a decoction of some roots, which they know\*.

When they are tired and excessively fatigued, after returning from a war, or from a hunt, they use sweating in stoves †, as a restorative.

In

---

\* *M. de Boffu* would have very much obliged all the world, by making use of his influence over the *Indians*, which he repeatedly mentions, in order to get from them the knowledge of such plants as they employ in their several diseases and aliments: this would have been really useful, and a proof of his humanity and curious inquiries. F.

† These stoves are round huts, built like ovens in the middle

In these baths they boil all sorts of medicinal and odoriferous herbs, whose effluces and salts rising with the steam of the water, enter into the body of the afflicted person, and restores his lost forces. This remedy is equally good for abating and destroying all kinds of pains, of course you see no Indian affected with the gout, the gravel, and other distempers which we are subject to in Europe; but this may likewise be attributed to their frequent bodily exercises. You see no great Dutch bellies there, nor any great tumours under the chin, such as the Piedmontese wens.

The Chactaws put a firm belief in enchanters and magicians, and when they meet with one such pretended forcerer, they cut off his head \* without any ceremony:

I saw an Indian of the nation of *Chactaws*, who had lately been baptized: as he had no  
 luck

---

middle of the villages; they are kept in order by an *Ash*, or public doctor.

\* In 1752, when I was at *Mobile*, I saw an Indian whom the others killed with a hatchet, because he pretended to be a forcerer. The other Indians attributed to him all the misfortunes that happen to their nation.

luck in hunting like his companions, he imagined he was bewitched; he went immediately to Father *Lefèvre* the Jesuit\* who had converted him, and told him that his *medicine* or trick was good for nothing, because since he had practised it upon him, he could kill no stags or roe-deer; he therefore desired he would take off his enchantment again. The Jesuit, in order to avoid the resentment of this Indian, did as if he annihilated the baptismal ceremony. Some time after, this Indian killed a roe-deer, either by accident, or by his own skill, and thus thought himself freed from the enchantment, and was content.

The mind of this nation in general, is very rough and unpolished. Though one tells them ever so much of the mysteries of our religion, they always answer, that what we say is above their understanding. They have, besides, very bad morals, most of them being addicted to sodomy. Those defiled men, wear long hair, and a little petticoat like the women, who despise them very much.

The

---

\* The Indians call the Jesuits the men with the black robe; they say that they are not like other men, and call them women, in derision.



The *Chattaws* are very active and merry; they have a play at ball, at which they are very expert; they invite the inhabitants of the neighbouring villages to it, exciting them by many smart sayings. The men and women assemble in their best ornaments, they pass the whole day in singing and dancing; they even dance all the night to the sound of the drum and *chichikois*.

The inhabitants of each village are distinguished by a separate fire, which they light in the middle of a great meadow. The next day is that appointed for the match; they agree upon a mark or aim about sixty yards off, and distinguished by two great poles, between which, the ball is to pass. They generally count sixteen till the game is up. They are forty on each side, and every one has a battledoor in his hand, about two feet and a half long, made very nearly in the form of ours, of walnut or chestnut wood, and covered with roe-skins.

An old man stands in the middle of the place appropriated to the play, and throws up into the air a ball of roe-skins, rolled about each other. The players then run, and endeavour to strike the ball with their battledoors; it is a pleasure to  
see

see them run naked, painted with various colours, having a tyger's tail fastened behind, and feathers on their heads and arms, which move as they run; and have a very odd effect: they push and throw each other down; he that has been expert enough to get the ball, sends it to his party; those of the opposite party run at him who has seized the ball; and send it back to their side; and thus they dispute it to each other reciprocally, with such an ardour, that they sometimes dislocate their shoulders by it. The players are never displeas'd; some old men, who assist at the play, become mediators, and determine, that the play is only intended as a recreation, and not as an opportunity of quarrelling. The wagers are considerable; the women bet among themselves.

When the players have given over, the women assemble among themselves to revenge their husbands who have lost the game. The battle-door they make use of, differs from that of the men; in being bent; they all are very active, and run against each other with extreme swiftness; pushing each other like the men, they having the same dress, except on those parts which modesty teaches them to cover. They only put

rouge on their cheeks, and vermillion, instead of powder, in their hair.

After playing well on both sides all the day long, every one retires with his glory or shame, but without rancour, promising to play again another time as well as they can: thus the Indians both men and women, exercise themselves in running; they are likewise very swift, for I have seen some run as fast as stags.

The children exercise themselves in shooting with a bow and arrows for prizes; he that shoots best, gets the prize of praise from an old man, who calls him an apprentice warrior; thus they are formed by emulation, without corporal punishment; they are very expert in shooting with an instrument made of reeds about seven feet long, into which they put a little arrow, feathered with the wool of a thistle, and in aiming at an object, they blow into the tube, and often hit the aim, and frequently kill little birds with it.

Almost all the assemblies of the *Chaflaws* are held in night-time. Though they are barbarous and ferocious, it is necessary, in order to gain their confidence, to take great care to keep your promises

promises to them, without which, they treat you with the greatest contempt, proudly telling you that you are a liar, an epithet which the *Indians* have given to the present governor, whom they call *Oalabé Meno*; i. e. the lying chief.

When the women are with child, their husbands abstain from salt, and from pork, for fear those aliments might do harm to their children. The women never lie-in in their huts; they go into the woods to be delivered, without receiving any assistance.

As soon as they are delivered, they wash their infants. The mothers apply a mass of earth to the foreheads of their children, to make them have flat heads, and as they get more strength they increase the bulk, it being a beauty among these people to have a flat head. They never swaddle their children.

They never wean their children till they are disgusted with their mother's milk. I have seen some children grown up so as to be able to tell the mother, *set down, that I may suckle*; and the mother immediately sat down. Their cradle is made of reeds, they put their children into it so

that their head lies three or four inches lower than the rest of the body, therefore you never see any contracted or hump-backed people amongst them. The women leave the huts in their catamenia, which the Indians call marks of valour. During that time, they are obliged to prepare their own meat and drink, and they do not return among men, till they are thoroughly purified. The Indians believe, that if they come near a woman in that state, they would fall sick, and that if they went to war after it, they would have bad luck.

Though the *Indians* only value themselves upon their origin from the side of the women, yet the latter are not allowed to correct the boys; they have only an authority over their daughters. If a mother should strike her son, she would be reprimanded and struck again; but if the boy disobeys her, she must bring him to an old man, who inflicts a punishment on him, and then throws some fresh water over his body.

If a woman commits an infidelity, she must *pass through the meadow*, i. e. all the young men, and sometimes even the old ones, satisfy their brutality on her, by turns. Such is the punishment

ment of adultery among the *Chattaws*. Sometimes the guilty woman, has the good luck, after this infamy, to find a mean fellow, who takes her as his wife, under the pretence that she must be disgusted with a criminal conduct, that has drawn such a punishment on her, and that she will consequently behave better for the future. Be this as it will, she is always looked upon as a depraved and immoral woman.

Before I finish my letter I must say a word of the *Tchicachas*, or *Chickaws*. This nation is not so numerous as the *Chattaws*, but more terrible, on account of their intrepidity. All the northern and southern *Indian nations*, and even the *French*, have attacked them, without ever being able to drive them out of their country, which is the finest and most fruitful on the continent. The *Chickaws* are tall, well made, and of an unparalleled courage. In 1752 and 1753, they attacked Mess. *Benoist* and *de Reggio*, who commanded the convoys from the *Illinois* station, descending the river *Mississippi*: these *Indians* always choose some advantageous situation, to make an attack in, their most common post is at the rocks of *Prudhomme*, the river being

ing narrow there, they can annoy the boats, which have no decks.

It is believed that the *Chicklaws* killed Messrs. *Bouffalot* and *de la Merliere*, these two officers, though they were very brave, fell into an ambuscade for want of experience, not knowing the topography of the country they were in any more than general *Braddock*. An officer ought, therefore, always to apply to that, in order to avoid surprises, or else he should always be on the defensive and prepared.

The *English* have always been in alliance with these valiant warriors; they have always traded with them, and supplied all their wants.

The *Indians* of this nation ride well on horseback; they leave the care of cultivating and sowing their grounds to their women, who are handsome and cleanly. When a *Chicklaw* has killed a deer, he tells his wife whereabouts it lies; she goes to fetch it, dresses it, and serves it up to her husband: the women never eat with the men, who seem very indifferent about them, but really love them better than any other nation.

The

The *Tchicahas*, or *Chickaws*, only punish adultery with whipping the two offenders who have been caught in the fact, making them run naked through the village; after which the husband repudiates his wife.

As these *Indians* gave shelter to the *Natches*, after the massacre of the *French*, the latter armed in 1736 against, and attacked them, with the united forces of the whole colony, but without success.

M. *d'Artaquette* major and governor for the king, in the country of the *Illinois*, came to join M. *de Bienville* the governor of *Louisiana*; he brought him the troops of the *Illinois*, and from the frontiers of *Canada*, but the army which that officer commanded, was surprised and defeated, because he had been abandoned by the *Indians*, who were our allies. M. *d'Artaquette* was taken, with seven officers, and about twenty-six soldiers and inhabitants, by the *Chickaws*, who burnt them alive; among them was the Father *Senat* a Jesuit, who went with M. *d'Artaquette* in the quality of chaplain. The detail of this tragic scene has been related by a serjeant, called *Louis Gamot*, who was a spectator of the sad fate which his companions underwent; he



reserved to be burnt last, but he escaped by an odd stratagem. As he was acquainted with the language of the *Indians*, he employed it on this occasion to utter invectives against them; and getting loose, he threw all he found near him at their heads, saying, you are dogs, because you have burnt my chiefs; I will be burnt too, I fear neither fire nor death, for I am a true man, make me suffer much, because I desire it. The *Chickaws*, seeing his resolution, looked upon him as an extraordinary fellow, and granted him his life; he was afterwards ransomed by an *Englishman* from *Carolina*, and is now at *Charleston* the capital of that colony.

In another expedition against the *Tchicachas*, which was undertaken on the 26th of May in the same year, and commanded by *M. de Bienville*, we had not any more success; many brave officers lost their lives in it, and the major-general of the army, and the adjutant received such dangerous wounds, that the last died of them. I have heard from the *Chevalier de Lucer*, who is of a Swiss offspring, that his father, who served as captain in our troops, had been in this unlucky expedition; this officer has likewise told me the story of the *Chevalier de Grondel*, who now belongs to the garrison of *Mobile*, and  
 commands

commands the Swiss troop of the regiment of *Halwill*, belonging to the service of the marines; he had then the command of a detachment of grenadiers of the regiment of *Karrer*, in *M. de Bienville's* army against the *Chickaws*.

In order to abridge the account of this affair, I shall only say, that this officer, joining fidelity and bravery natural to his nation, to the impetuosity of youth, received five shot in his body during the attack. As he remained on the field of battle after the retreat, he was just going to become the object of the enemy's vengeance and fury, if several soldiers of his troop had not generously exposed their lives to save his, notwithstanding the balls and arrows which were sent at them from the fort of the *Chickaws*, killed five of them one after another.

However, one, without fearing the danger, returned to the field, and happily arrived in his troop carrying his officer on his shoulders. The chief surgeon of the army tried all he knew to cure him, and the general, who values military merit, did not fail to give in an account of the officer's behaviour at court; and *M. de Maurepas*, in consideration of the wounds *M. de Grondel* had received, granted him an extraordinary grati-

gratification, till he could get the cross of *St. Louis*.

The soldier \* who saved him at the peril of his life, was immediately made serjeant at the head of his troop. You see, Sir, by this short account, how worthy of admiration that well-established subordination is, among the troops of the *Helvetic* body, that are so inviolably attached to the service of our King, and how much those that keep it in force feel the happy effects of it.

The action of these soldiers, which was really an heroic one, well deserves that their names should be transmitted to posterity.

In 1754, the Baron *de Porneuf* imparted to me his intention of going upon a discovery into the west of *Louisiana*, up the *Mississippi* and the river *Missouris*, the sources of which are unknown to us. This officer, who is a *Canadian*, has the proper qualities for undertaking such an expedition; but the war which arose between *France* and *England*, on account of the boundaries

---

\* His name was *Reguisse*.

ries of these countries, has been an obstacle to the execution of this project.

I can assure you, that I should have been very happy to accompany him, both for the honour of my King and for my own satisfaction; for, notwithstanding the fatigues and dangers I have undergone in my voyages, I have never been disgusted or tired out of patience. Misfortunes pass like dreams, and I see nothing so happy as the life of a traveller; he constantly sees new objects, which instruct and amuse him at the same time. His mind is cultivated in an agreeable manner, he learns to read the great book of the universe, which cannot be read in a library, where there are as many systems, opinions, and contradictions, as authors. If you were in my place, you would have room to make philosophical reflections. I am, S I R, &c.

*At the fort of Tombekbé, the  
30th of September 1759.*

P. S. As I may perhaps not meet with an opportunity of writing to you this good while, on account of the war, I shall add here an abstract concerning the differences which have arisen between

tween us and the *Chattaws*. Some time after the war with the *Tchikachas* or *Chickaws*, the *French* had some quarrels with a party of *Chattaws*, who followed the interest of a prince of their nation called the *Red Shoe*, who was insolent, and committed several hostilities against the *French*. M. de *Vaudreuil*, then governor of *Louisiana*, having heard of this action, and what gave occasion to it, immediately forbid all the *French* to go to that nation, and commanded them not to sell them any arms or ammunition, in order to stop these commotions soon, and without bloodshed.

The Marquis de *Vaudreuil*, after these precautions, sent to the sovereign of the nation, to inquire whether he was angry with the *French*, as the *Red Shoe*; the sovereign answered, by means of the interpreter, that he was the friend of the *French*; that his general, meaning Prince *Red Shoe*, had lost his senses.

After this answer, he got a present, but was much surprised to find neither arms nor powder and shot in it, at a time when he was our friend as before. This proceeding, together with the prohibition of selling them arms, which they knew had been issued out, redoubled their astonishment,

nishment, and brought them to an explication with the governor, who told them, that our people would not treat with them concerning arms and ammunition, as long as the *Red Shoe* had not found his wits again; because, if they got powder, they could not help, being all brothers, to give a share of it to the warriors of captain or chief *Red Shoe*. This answer determined them to speak to the tribes that insulted us; they told them, if they did not soon go with the calumet to the *French*, they themselves would go to war against them as rebels. This threat made them ask peace, and offer a reparation to the *French*, who were not in a condition to sustain a war against so numerous a nation.

Thus *M. de Vaudreuil*, as a wise politician, put a stop to this war, without expences to the state, and without exposing a single man; it was *M. de Grand-pré*, a captain of our troops, who was charged with this important negociation; the Marquis could not pitch upon a fitter person. *M. de Grand-pré* is a *Canadian*, and serves the King with zeal, bravery, and disinterestedness. I was upon the point of going to serve under him at Fort *Tombekbé* among the *Chactaws*, when I first arrived here in 1751.

L E T.



## L E T T E R   X I X .

*To the same.*

*The Author returns to Mobile. Remarkable Events which happened in the Cat's Isle. Tragic Death of the Sieur Duroux governor of that isle.*

S I R,

I AM now returned from my voyage  
 I up the river of *Tombekbé*. I have fulfilled this important and troublesome mission, to the satisfaction of my superiors. In waiting for my recal to *New Orleans*, my curiosity led me to visit the little isles on the coast of *Louisiana*.

The isle of *Massacre* was the first where the *French* made any settlements. It got its name because the *French*, when they landed there, found a great quantity of human skeletons  
 but

but could not distinguish whether they were of *Spaniards* or *Indians*.

It has since been called the *Dauphin* isle\*. It was peopled by degrees; they built magazines, a fort, and barracks there.

In

---

\* It must not be confounded with that which is mentioned in the relation of the first voyage of the East India company to the isle of *Madagascar*, which they called too precipitately the *Dauphin's* island.

The author of this relation, who wrote in 1665, and had done that same voyage, agrees that the *English* and *Dutch*, who were already established in *India*, were the models which M. de Colbert proposed to imitate, and afterwards to surpass; but all the projects of that worthy minister proved abortive, both by the imprudence and vanity peculiar to the nation, and by the mismanagement of those who were at the head of affairs.

The same author adds, that he only found there “ violent  
“ and unskilful men, ill chosen officers, incapable of the oc-  
“ cupation they were intended for; whereas they ought to  
“ have been men above the coarser passions, with no other  
“ inclinations than for the good of their country, which  
“ ought to be the rule by which every one should be guided  
“ who wishes to acquit himself with honour.”

It seems to me, that this useful lesson should be grav'd in-  
to the hearts of all those who go to our colonies with some  
authority.

I have



In 1717, the entrance of the harbour was stopped up by a prodigious quantity of sand, collected together by a hurricane; the whole isle was almost overflowed, and great numbers of cattle were drowned; it was necessary to seek another port, and they chose the isle *Surgere*, which has since been called *Ship Island*; it has a pretty good harbour. In 1722 M. de Bienville transported every one from thence to *New Orleans*, and that place became the capital of *Louisiana*.

Six leagues from the *Ship Island* is the *Cats Isle*, so called on account of the number of wild cats which have been found there. This isle is only remarkable on account of the murders and robberies which have been committed there during the command of two officers, who were sent thither by M. de Kerleréc, governor of *Louisiana*:

In 1757, he appointed the Sieur *Duroix* chief commander of this isle, and gave him a detachment

---

I have chosen this piece of history as an example, which has a particular similitude with what is seen every day in our colonies. There are, however, governors and intendants, that must not be confounded with those who have got fortunes with rapidity, and in an odious manner, from the public miseries, and from the blood of many unhappy people.

ment of troops from the marines, and from the Swiss regiment of *Hakuyl*.

The *Sieur Duroux* was no sooner come thither, than he looked upon himself as absolute; he immediately assumed the right of having a garden made by the soldiers of the garrison; he likewise employed them to make for him lime from shells, and charcoal, but he never paid them; and those who refused to submit to these vexations, were fastened quite naked to a tree, and exposed to the insupportable attacks of the *maringoins* or gnats. This was the punishment which the officer made the soldiers of his garrison undergo; an unworthy treatment, unexampled even among barbarians.

The *Sieur Duroux* obliged them to make their bread of the flour saved from the wreck of a Spanish ship, which was lost on the coast; and sold for his own account the King's flour, intended for the use of the garrison. This repeated bad usage from this commander, determined some soldiers to go to *New Orleans*, in order to complain to the governor, to whom they shewed some of the bad bread they were forced to eat; but *M. de Kerlerec* paid no regard to their just remonstrances, and sent them back at the

discretion of their commander. Then these wretches, fearing his resentment, resolved to make an example of him, which they executed in ceremony.

One day, when that officer was gone out a hunting in a neighbouring little isle, the revolted troop took their measures for executing their plot, which was to murder the *Sieur Duroux*. So strange a resolution could only be occasioned by their not having obtained the desired justice from the governor. If an officer superior to *M. Duroux* had been sent in his place, and the latter left to command as the second officer, this misfortune would have been avoided.

As he returned from hunting, the sentinel, perceiving the boat at sea, hoisted the *French* flag, upon which the garrison took to arms, and went out into the field. The rebellious soldiers advancing to the shore with their corporal at their head, called to the boat by means of a speaking trumpet, according to custom; the *Sieur Duroux* answered, "*Commander*;" he lands, and as he sets his foot on shore, the corporal gives the signal, and at the same instant the soldiers fire, and their commander falls, pierced with wounds;

wounds; the soldiers then stripped him, and threw his corpse into the sea. Such was the burial and the punishment of this petty tyrant, who was regretted by nobody, for he had no other recommendation than that of the *Sieur Thiton*, the governor's first secretary. The soldiers, become masters of the isle, set at liberty an inhabitant whose name was *Beaudrot*, who had been unjustly imprisoned by the late commander. The *Sieur Duroux* had assumed the privileges of an admiral of France, and pretended to share with the soldiers and inhabitants all that they should save of any vessel wrecked upon the *Cats Island*; and all that refused to pay him his share were severely punished, as if they had committed some great crime. This was the crime of *Beaudrot*; he was put in irons because he would not share some goods with the commander, which he had saved from the wreck of a *Spanish* ship called the *Situart*, which was wrecked on the isle in 1758.

The soldiers who had killed *M. Duroux*, having afterwards pillaged the effects belonging to the King in the *Cats Isle*, took the inhabitant whom they had set free, and obliged him to bring them into the road to the English colony of *Carolina*. When they arrived in the country

of a great Indian chief, whom the Europeans have stiled Emperor of the *Kawytas*, they sent back *Beaudrot* with a certificate, which proved that he had been obliged to serve them as a guide. Part of this troop went towards the *English*; but those who remained among the Indians, were soon seized by order of M. de *Montberaut*, then governor of the fort at the *Allibamons*, among this last party was a corporal of the regiment of *Hakwyl*, who, in order to avoid being sawed asunder, as is usual among the Swifs, killed himself with a knife, which he wore hung from his neck, as the Indians do.

M. de *Beaudin*, an officer of the garrison, was sent with a detachment, in order to conduct the criminals to *Mobile*. During this interval, the two sons of *Beaudrot* arrived at *Mobile* from *New Orleans*, and brought, without knowing it, an order from the governor to M. de *Velle*, who commanded at *Mobile*, for arresting their father; who was in his habitation with great security; he returned to prison without reluctance, not knowing that the deserters whom he had guided were taken. M. de *Velle* transmitted the criminals to *New Orleans*, where a court-martial was held to judge them.

*Beaudrot*

*Beaudrot* the inhabitant, for guiding the murderers of the governor of *Cats Isle*, was sentenced to be broke upon the wheel, and his corpse to be thrown into the river; which was accordingly executed; a soldier suffered the same punishment, and a Swiss was sawed alive through the middle of his body.

When one reflects upon the fate of the unhappy *Beaudrot*, it is easily perceived that he was judged contrary to form, and by military men, who were ignorant of civil and criminal laws, as he could not have deserved the cruel punishment which he underwent. If politics require that for preserving public safety, no crime should be left unpunished, justice demands in favour of humanity, that the judge should always be more afraid of punishing too much than too little, according to the axiom, *It is better to let an hundred guilty men escape, than to punish one single innocent man.*

If the man ought to be punished in order to serve as an example, according to this law, the punishment might have been mitigated in favour of his wife and four children, whom his death threw into the greatest desolation; among the four children was a girl of an admirable

figure, who was admired in the whole colony for her beauty, and still more for her virtue; this charming Creole, and the rest of the family, are retired into an habitation far from the commerce of men, to lament the death of their unhappy father.

This unhappy man had been successfully employed in some important negotiations with the *Indians*, with whom he was in high esteem. He spoke their language, and, from experience, he knew the situation of the country as well as themselves. He had likewise an extraordinary bodily strength. All these qualities had so far gained him the esteem and friendship of the *Chattaws*, who had adopted him into their nation, that they would certainly have revolted on his account, had not *M. de Velle* \* wisely taken care to keep his imprisonment and execution from coming to their knowledge.

After the tragic death of the *Sieur Duroux*, *M. de Kerlerrec* fixed upon the *Sieur de Cha*— to succeed to the command of the *Cats Island*.

That

---

\* This officer knows that nation perfectly well, having been governor of *Tombekbé* for several years; the *Indians* esteemed him much on account of his bravery and disinterested behaviour.

That officer set out from *New Orleans* in 1758, with a garrison composed of soldiers and inhabitants of the capital; but the inhabitants were all vagrants, whom the magistrates sent in their own stead, with the governor's consent, for the service of the place.

These vagabonds stayed in the *Cats Isle* as long as those citizens paid them, whose business it was to guard the place. You may well imagine, that a body of such troops, who are not alternately relieved in their posts, according to the rule of service, take opportunities to lay schemes for deserting, as it has happened in many stations of *Louisiana*.

In March 1759 there appeared, in sight of this island, a three-masted ship, belonging to M. *St. Crieg*, a merchant, who had bought her at the *Havannah*; her cargo consisted in sugar, coffee, taffias, cables, and some warlike stores. The crew were merely Spanish sailors, who abandoned Captain *St. Crieg* upon the coast of *Louisiana* near *Balise*; this obliged him to embark in his long-boat, with a few men who remained with him. He arrived at *New Orleans*, and addressed himself to M. *de Belle-Isle*, fort-major and commander during the governor's



absence, he begged this officer to give him people, in order to go out in search of his ship, which could only be lost on the coast of the *Cats Island*.

M. de Belle-Isle gave the *Sieur St. Crieg* an intelligent serjeant and ten soldiers, to navigate his ship; at the same time he wrote to the *Sieur C---*: "That if this ship were lost near his station, he should immediately place a guard on her, and forbid, under pain of death, that nothing should be unloaded out of her, without the consent of the *Sieur St. Crieg*, the proprietor; and lastly, that he should not fail to conform to the orders of the King's marine, specified under the title *Shipwreck*," &c. Unhappily for the *Sieur St. Crieg* the advice of M. de Belle-Isle came too late; the *Sieur de C---* had already taken care to have the cargo of the ship unloaded by the soldiers and inhabitants, who hid it in the neighbouring sands; they took all the necessary precautions to cover this trick. The *Sieur St. Crieg* arrived at the *Cats Ile*, put the major's letter into the commander's hands, and then went into his ship with his people in order to search her; but perceiving that he had forgotten his pocket-book, in which he had the bill of lading, he left her immediately, and went

went on shore to fetch it: a happy accident of Providence! he was but just come on shore, when his ship suddenly took fire, and burnt with such fierceness, that three men who were in the hold were burnt to death: the others only escaped by throwing themselves into the sea, and swimming on shore.

The *Sieur St. Crieg* complained to *M. de Kerle-rec*; but after a long delay, the governor obliged the captain to terminate his quarrel with the *Sieur de C—*, the latter giving the former the sum of 1500 livres. This commander being recalled to *New Orleans*, gave himself up to such debaucheries, that he scandalized the whole colony.

\* At the time when the *Sieur St. Crieg* reclaimed his ship with *M. de Belle-Isle*, and received his orders addressed to *M. de C—*, to take care of the preservation of the cargo, the governor of the *Cars Isle* wrote to *M. de Belle-Isle* himself: "That, on such a day, a ship with three masts was lost in  
 " sight of his station, and he having made signs without re-  
 " ceiving any answer, he took it to belong to the enemy,  
 " who kept his men in close quarters; that he having arm-  
 " ed the boat belonging to his station, and going into it  
 " with all his people, after getting no answer upon a re-  
 " peated signal, came on board the ship, but found no living  
 " soul in her, and the cargo taken out of her; he only  
 " found a cut cable upon the deck, and saw that the ship  
 " was bored for twenty-six guns.

ny. When he had consumed all that he had gained by his iniquitous practices, he went on board a Dutch ship from *Curaçao*, a colony belonging to that republic. The opinions are divided upon the clandestine evasion of this officer; some believe, that he escaped in order to avoid the punishments which his crimes deserved; others think he was charged with papers to court from the governor: the event will determine this.

It is sufficiently proved by this restitution of 1500 livres on the part of the *Sieur de C——*, that this commander had pillaged the ship of Captain *St. Crieg*, getting 60,000 livres by it, according to his own confession to the *Sieur la Perliere*, who succeeded him in the government of *Cats Island*. He has however escaped the capital punishment which this piracy deserved\*. For the quoted order says, “That all who shall endanger the life of shipwrecked persons, and lay hands upon their goods, shall be punished with death.” This crime is so enormous, that, though one were not a Christian, natural religion

---

\* The *Sieur de C——*, hoping to enjoy the fruits of his iniquity in France, died there as he had lived, that is, in a debauch, by a decree of Providence.

religion engages us to assist the unhappy in time of danger. Such were the officers in whom the governor of *Louisiana* put confidence.

We have just received advice, that a party of warriors of the nation of *Cherokees*, commanded by their chief of war called *Wolf*, have taken the fort *London* belonging to Great Britain, and that the English governor of it, *M. Damery*, has been killed by the Indians, who have put earth in his mouth, saying, You dog, since you are so very greedy of earth, be satisfied and gorged with it; they have done the same to others.

If I do not set out for *France*, I shall write to you from *New Orleans*, concerning the discord between the two chiefs of the colony, *M. de Kerlerec* the governor, and *M. de Rochemore* the *ordonnateur*. I am, S I R, &c.

At Fort Mobile, the 10th  
of January 1760.

L E T.



## L E T T E R XX.

*To the same.*

*The Author goes to New Orleans. Cause of the Troubles which agitate that Place. Moving Relation of M. de Belle-Isle's Captivity among the Attakapas. Curious Animals and salutary Simples to be met with in Louisiana.*

S I R,

I HAVE so much news to communicate to you, that I know not where to begin: I wrote to you from Tombebbé, that every thing was in confusion in the capital; indeed every body talks of quarrels and divisions; avidity and interest are every where lighting the torch of discord. As I neither have, nor will have, any part in all these quarrels, and as I cannot satisfy my zeal for the king's service in this colony, where every thing is in disorder,

I have

I have not ceased to demand leave to return to *France*. The most faithful subjects, who will do their duty, are contradicted and disgraced, and their zeal is rewarded with the most cruel persecutions. But without enquiring minutely into the sufferings of a number of brave officers, most of them still alive, I shall only speak of those which *M. de Belle-Isle* has undergone. This worthy officer, whose probity and unquestionable conduct have gained him the good will and esteem of all worthy men, and especially of the general officers, such as *M. de Perier*, *M. de Bienville*, and the *Marquis de Vaudreuil*, &c. well deserves that I should tell his story to you, having heard it from himself with all its circumstances.

I shall give you an account of what has happened during the forty-five years which he served the king in this colony \*. I shall say nothing but truth,

---

\* The history of *M. de Belle-Isle*, Chevalier of the royal military order of *St. Louis*, Major of *New Orleans*, and who has formerly served as Major General of the troops of the marine in *Louisiana*, has been inserted in a *Relation of Louisiana* printed at Paris in 1758. The author of it left the colony in 1733, has forgotten the most interesting circumstances, and the facts he has mentioned, have been disowned by *M.*

truth, though some circumstances may appear very wondrous.

As I know the goodness of your heart, I am sure you will pity the unhappy fate of this poor officer; great souls are not ashamed to shew that they are touched by the misfortunes of others: even the *Indians* say, that he who is not sensible to the sufferings of his brothers, is unworthy of bearing the name of a man, and that he ought to be avoided as the pest of society.

In 1719, *M. de Crozat* put *Louisiana* into the hands of the West India company, who sent a thousand men to people it. *M. de Belle-Isle* embarked in one of their ships at port *l'Orient*, with some other officers and volunteers, for the new colony. The winds and currents carried the ship to the bay of *St. Bernard* in the Mexican gulph. The captain sent his boat on shore in order to fetch water. *M. de Belle-Isle* and four of his companions went into the boat with the captains consent. Whilst the boat returned to the ship, the officers went a hunting: the boat came on shore again, and having taken  
in

---

*de Belle-Isle* himself: my relation is an abstract of a manuscript memoir, written by that officer's own hand.

in the necessary provision of fresh water, returned on board without the young officers, who were not yet returned.

The captain is impatient, weighs anchor and sets sail, leaving the five passengers on shore. Their agitation and anxiety, when they returned to the shore and found the boat and ship gone, may well be imagined. Thus being abandoned in an unknown country, they erred for a long time upon the desert coast, having the sea on one side, and a country inhabited by a nation of cannibals on the other. They did not venture to quit the marshy shores of the sea; they were in such despair of finding a remedy for their misfortunes that they knew not what to do: this alone was capable to make them lose their senses; and then the thought of falling into the hands of cannibals, troubled the imagination of these young Europeans. They went along the shore in the mistaken opinion, that the ship was gone to the west, imploring divine mercy, and complaining of their unhappy fate. They lived upon insects and herbs, not knowing whether they were good or bad; what was most troublesome to them was the abundance of gnats in that place, as they had nothing to defend themselves against them. They continued fe-

veral



veral days in this situation. *M. de Belle-Isle* had taken a young dog from the ship, which was very fond of him. His companions were often tempted to kill him; their hunger was extreme: *M. de Belle-Isle* gave the dog up to them, but would not kill it himself; one of his companions seized the dog; but he was so weak, that as he was going to strike with the knife, the dog escaped, ran into the woods, and was not seen again. The four unhappy officers died with hunger one after another, in sight of *M. de Belle-Isle*, who did all he could to dig them graves in the earth, or rather in the sand, with his own hands, to preserve their sad remains from the voraciousness of wild beasts: he paid this tribute to human nature in sighing over its miseries, nothing but the strength of his constitution could make him survive them. He was resolute enough, in order to subsist, to eat the worms which he found in rotten wood. Some days after the death of his comrades, he saw at a distance his dog holding something in his mouth; he called him, the creature came to him fawning, and with great demonstrations of joy, threw at his feet an *opossum*; the dog howled, as if he would say, I bring thee something to support life. The *opossums* are good eating, and of the size of a sucking pig. *M.*  
*de*

*de Belle-Iſle*, having no other company than his dog, looked about for food every where. At night he always made a little intrenchment at the foot of a tree, in order to ſhelter himſelf againſt the wild beaſts. One day a tyger \* came near the place, where he ſlept; his dog watched by his ſide, he ſaw the tyger, and ran at it with a prodigious howl. *M. de Belle-Iſle* awoke, and haſtened to his aſſiſtance; the tyger let the dog looſe, but had wounded him: his maſter was obliged to kill him, leſt he ſhould turn mad, and afterwards he eat him. Then being left alone in this deſart place, he fell on his knees, liſted up his hands to heaven, and thanked the Almighty for preſerving him till now; and reſigning himſelf to Providence he went into the country in order to ſeek for men. He ſoon found foot-ſteps, and followed them to the banks of a river, where finding a *piragua*, he croſſes the river in it. On the oppoſite ſhore were ſome *Indians*, drying human fleſh and fiſh; they were of the nation of the *Attakapas* †;

Vol. I.

Z

they

\* By this muſt always be underſtood the *American tyger*, i. e. the *brown cat* of *P. Synopſis of Quad.* p. 179, and the *Cugacnora* of *Piſo* and *Margrave* in their *Nat. Hiſt. Braſil.*

† This name ſignifies men-eaters among the *American nations*.

they went towards *M. de Belle-Isle*, whom they took for a ghost, because he was lean; he pointed to his mouth, and made signs of being hungry. The Indians would not kill him because he was excessively lean; they offered him some human flesh, but he preferred fish, of which he eat greedily. The *Indians* looked at this cloathed man, stripped him naked and divided his cloaths among themselves; they then carried him to their village in order to fatten him. There he had the good fortune to become the *dog* \* of an old widow. He recovered his strength gradually; but was extremely sad, constantly apprehending, that his hosts would sacrifice him to their false deities, and afterwards make a feast of his flesh; his imagination was always struck with the terrible sight of the feasts which those barbarians made of the flesh of their fattest prisoners of war, which I cannot help shuddering at, whilst I relate it. He always expected to receive a blow with the club, as soon as he should be fat. The Indians held a council,

---

tions. When they take an enemy in the wars, they make a great feast and eat his flesh. They commonly live upon fish and drink the *Cassine*. They can speak by signs, and hold long pantomime conversations.

\* An expression which signifies *slave*.

cil, in which they resolved that it would be shameful and cowardly to kill a man, that did not come to them to do any harm, but to demand their hospitality; in consequence of this resolution, he remained a slave of the widow. The first days of his slavery, though it was not a heavy one, were very disagreeable to him, because he was obliged to take care of the little children of these men-eaters, and to carry them on his shoulders, which was very troublesome to him; for he was naked like them, having no more cloaths than were sufficient to make his nakedness less indetent; but the widow above-mentioned, having taken him under her protection, he was better treated in the sequel.

As *M. de Bell-Isle* was young and strong, he acquitted himself very well of his functions as a slave, and even gained the good graces of his mistress so much, that she adopted him, and he was then set at liberty, and looked upon as one belonging to the nation. He soon learnt the manner of conversing in pantomimes, and the art of using the bow and arrows as well as they could do it. They took him into the wars, where he shewed them his dexterity, by killing one of their enemies with an arrow in their presence, he was then acknowledged a true warrior.

Another *Indian* having killed a roebuck, they dried the flesh of the man and the roe, to make use of it as provisions on their expeditions. One day as they were walking, *M. de Belle-Isle* being hungry, asked for something to eat. An *Indian* gave him some human flesh, saying it was of the roe-buck. *M. de Belle-Isle* eat of it without knowing the cheat; and the *Indian* afterwards said to him: *Formerly thou didst make difficulty, but now thou canst eat man's flesh as well as ourselves*: at these words *M. de Belle-Isle* threw up all he had eaten.

About two years after his captivity, some deputies arrived at the *Attakapas*, from a nation who sent them the calumet of peace. A kind providential care! This nation lived in *New Mexico*, and were the neighbours of the *Natchitoches*, where *M. de Hucheros de Saint Denis* commanded, who was beloved and respected by the deputies of this nation, though they lived on Spanish ground. After attentively considering *M. de Belle-Isle*, they told the *Attakapas*, that in the country from whence they came, there were white men like him: the *Attakapas* said he was a *dog*, whom they had found towards the great lake, where his comrades were starved to death; that they had brought him to their habitations,  
 where

where a woman had made him her slave; that they had taken him to war against a nation which they conquered in a battle, and that he had distinguished himself on that occasion, and shewed them his skill in sending an arrow, which killed one of their adversaries; that they had for that reason adopted him, and received him as a warrior.

This officer, who heard their conversation, did as if he took no notice of it; and immediately conceived the idea of returning to his country: he took one of the Indian deputies apart; and questioned him much about the white men he had seen. *M. de Belle-Isle* had luckily preserved his commission in a box; he made some ink with soot, and wrote with a crow-quill the following words: “ *To the first chief of the white men.* I am such and such a person, abandoned at the bay of *St. Bernard*; my comrades died of hunger and wretchedness before my face, and I am captive at the *Attakapas.*”

This unhappy officer gave his commission to the *Indian*, telling him it was some speaking paper; that, by presenting it to the chief of the *French* in his country, he would be well received. The *Indian* believed, that this letter had something divine in it, because it was to speak for him to

the *French*. His countrymen wanted to take it from him; but he escaped by swimming across a river; and lest he should wet the letter, he held it up in the air. This *Indian*, after a journey of one hundred and fifty leagues, arrived at the *Natchitoches*\*, an Indian nation. The French commander there at that time being M. *Hucheros de St. Denis*, an officer of distinction, known for having made the first journey over land from *Louisiana* to *Mexico*, where he married the *Spanish* governor's niece. The *Indian* gave him M. *de Belle-Isle's* letter, and M. *de St. Denis* received him very well, and made him many presents; after which, this officer began to cry after the manner of the *Indians*, who asked what ailed him? He answered, he wept for his brother who was a captive among the *Attakapas*. As M. *de Saint Denis* was in great esteem with the nations about him, the *Indian* who brought the letter promised to fetch M. *de Belle-Isle*, and some other *Indians* joined him.

M. *de Saint Denis* gave them some shirts and a hat for M. *de Belle-Isle*, and they set out immediately, ten in number, on horseback, and armed

---

\* A station near *Mexico*. There is a settlement of *Indians* on the *Riviere Rouge*, or *Red-river*.

ed with guns; promising to *M. de Saint Denis* to return in two *moons* time with his brother upon a horse, which they led with them.

On arriving at the *Attakapas*, they discharged their fire-arms several times, the explosion of which the other Indians took to be thunder: they gave *M. de Belle Isle* the letter of *M. de Saint Denis*, which mentioned, that he had nothing to fear with those Indians, and that he rejoiced beforehand that he should see him. The joy which this letter gave to the officer is inexpressible; however he feared that the *Attakapas* would oppose his departure. But the chief of the deputation made him get quickly on horseback, and went off with his whole troop. The *Attakapas* being frightened with the report of the muskets, did not venture to say any thing, and the woman who had adopted *M. de Belle-Isle* shed tears. Thus this officer escaped from a captivity, which might otherwise have lasted as long as his life.

The *Indian* who carried off *M. de Belle-Isle* was as proud as *Hernando Cortez* when he conquered *Montezuma*, the last emperor of *Mexico*. They arrived at the *Natchitoches*, but did not find *M. de Saint Denis* there; for he was gone to *Biloxi*,

Z 4

which



which was then the chief place of *Louisiana*, *New Orleans* being not yet built.

M. d'Orvilliers, who commanded at the *Natchitoches* in M. *Saint Denis's* absence, sent M. de *Belle-Isle* and his escort to M. de *Bienville*, then governor of *Louisiana*. That general embraced him, being happy to see him, and liberally rewarded his deliverers. Every one complimented him on his escape from this captivity; M. de *Bienville* gave him a suit of cloaths.

This officer has since been very useful to the governor, by his knowledge of the customs of the *Attakapas*, whom the Spaniards of *New Mexico* could never subdue, as they have done with the other nations of their empire.

M. de *Bienville* sent a present to the *Attakapas*, and another to the widow who had adopted and protected M. de *Belle-Isle*.

These people, who did not expect this generosity from the governor, sent ambassadors \* to him to thank him, and to make an alliance with the  
*French.*

---

\* The chief of the embassy addressed the following speech to M. de *Bienville*, which M. de *Belle-Isle* interpreted; "My  
" father,

*French.* M. de Belle-Isle's mistress attended in person; since this period the *French* have always been humanely treated by the *Attakapas*, who have at their desire left off the barbarous custom of eating human flesh.

When the *Attakapas* came to *New Orleans*, they were well received by all the *French*, in gratitude of the reception M. de Belle-Isle had met with among them; for without them, he would have undergone the unhappy fate of his companions.

M. de Bienville sometimes procured himself the diversion of a pantomime with these cannibals, by means of M. de Belle-Isle, who, as their pupil, conversed with them by gestures. The *Attakapas* are armed with bows and very great arrows; they cultivate maize, as the other *North American*

---

“ father, the white man, whom thou seest here, is thy flesh  
 “ and blood, he was united to us by adoption. His brothers  
 “ were starved to death, if my nation had found them sooner,  
 “ they would live still and enjoy the same prerogative.”

The hospitality shewn to M. de Belle-Isle by the *Attakapas*, convinced us, that we must regard their cruelty only as a fault of education, and that nature has planted sentiments of humanity in their breast.

*American* nations do. This part of the world is of such an extent, that it has not yet been possible to become acquainted with all the nations in it, nor with its limits.

In 1759, M. de Marigni de Mandeville\*, an officer of distinction, formed the design, with the consent of the governor of *Louisiana*, of making new discoveries towards the isle of *Barataria*, of which we know the coasts but very imperfectly: with this intent he made a general map of the colony. This officer has discovered this unknown country at his own expence, with indefatigable zeal, which characterizes a worthy citizen, who is always occupied for the glory of his prince, and the enlargement of his possessions,

I have endeavoured, in my preceding letters, to give you an abridgment of the history of the country, from the time of its discovery till now, and an idea of the situation of its commerce, and likewise of every thing that seemed instructive and amusing to me. I do not believe I have omitted any thing material, I shall now finish  
our

---

\* See the Memoirs of this officer, printed at Paris, by Guillaume Desprès, in the rue S. Jacques 1765.

our correspondence by some observations on the natural history of this colony, of which you could learn nothing from the special relations that are published. You must know then, Sir, that all the fruit-trees which have been transported thither from *Europe* succeed very well there. *M. Fazende*, one of the superior council of *Louisiana*, has brought a fig-tree from *Provence*, the figs of which are excellent; as this tree is propagated by layers, it richly supplies all the habitations with them. Among the fruit peculiar to this country, there is one called a battledoe, it has the figure and taste of a pickled cucumber. This fruit is very common about *Mobile*, and it is very refreshing.

The *piakmine* is a kind of medlar, called *ou-goufle* by the Indians; this fruit, which is no bigger than the European medlar, is yellow and red like an apricot; it is a very good astringent, and an excellent remedy to stop the dysentery and bloody flux. The Indians make bread of it, in the form of ginger-bread, and dry it for their long voyages\*.

The

---

\* The *piakmine* has yet another virtue; take a quantity of its seeds, pound them, then infuse fresh water upon them, which

The *Jasmine* fruit has the form and colour of a lemon; it is odoriferous, and tastes like Banian figs; its seeds resemble beans; they are a poison to hogs †.

Here are a number of orange and peach trees; and both the oranges and peaches are so common in this colony, that they are left under the trees to rot.

There are apple-trees and plum-trees; and whole forests of walnut-trees; of which there is a white kind or the *hiccory*, and another black; both kinds bear nuts; they are as in Europe of different goodness for eating; there are likewise some walnuts as big as the fist, but they are bitter, having very thick and hard shells. There is a tree which bears a fruit called *pacannes*; they are oblong like almonds, and more delicious:  
the

which must stand upon them twenty-four hours: strain the water through a cloth and keep it in a bottle. When you are attacked with the gravel, drink a glass full of the infusion fasting, and continue to do it till you are cured †.

† This is perhaps the persimon, *diospyros Virginiana* Linn. F.

‡ This plant seems to be one of the various kinds of *anona*, which grow over all the warmer parts of *North-America*. F.

the Indians make an oil of it, to season their *sagamitty* with.

It is a circumstance worthy of admiration, to see the providence of the Creator, who has planted such a number of fruit-trees of various kinds in this part of the new world. There are thousands of curious animals, known before neither by their shape nor by their name, and of which men of the preceding ages have not even had an idea.

There are red and likewise white bays; the latter bears a white flower like a tulip; it is an exceeding bushy tree, and would be an ornament to the gardens of European monarchs: the Indians call it the tree of peace\*.

Near the banks of rivers there are vines, which climb so high along the trees, that when the grapes are taken off, they can often make a whole barrel full of wine from a single stock. These vines grow without cultivation, and the wine that is made of them is very  
harsh

---

\* This is probably either the *tuliptree*, *liriodendron tulipifera*. Linn. or the *laurus æstivalis*. Linn. F.

harsh \*. There are many mulberry-trees † in the woods, and their berries are very sweet; there are likewise some that always keep the figure of shrubs, and their berries are made use of for jellies.

There is a tree in the woods full of spines of six inches in length; its wood is so hard, that it makes the edge of the hatchets blunt, and sometimes breaks them. The Indians, by means of fire, make mortars of it to crush their maize in. This tree bears pods about a foot long like *cassia*; the fruit they contain is gummy and sticking, having several seeds like beans. It is an excellent laxative, and the Indians take it as a purge.

There are resinous trees (such as pines, &c.) in the woods, which produce resin and tar; there are likewise many trees, from which a kind of gum like turpentine runs down.

There

---

\* The American forests have three kinds of vines; the *vitis labrusca*, *vulpina*, and *arborea*, Linn. And this, here mentioned, seems to be the last. F.

† The *morus rubra* Linn. is the mulberry-tree, known to grow in *North America*. F.

There is a shrub which we call *cirier*, or the wax-tree, and it resembles an olive-tree. It bears little berries like juniper, they are melted in water \*, and give a kind of wax for candles ; this wax is of a fine green, and has an aromatic smell. The Sieur *Alexandre*, a surgeon and chemist, is the first that discovered it here. The academy of sciences gave him a pension for this discovery. He has likewise found the method of bleaching it, as we do bees wax in *Europe*.

Whilst I was in *Louisiana*, the inhabitants got from *St. Domingo* plants of sugar-canes, in order to make plantations of them. M. *Dubreuil*, who commands the militia of citizens, was the first planter that built a sugar-mill at *New Orleans*.

It is known, that sugar is made of the juice of a reed or cane, which is propagated by layers ; it grows tall and thick, in proportion to the goodness of the soil. The canes have joints at certain distances ; when these are ripe, which is easily known by the yellow hue which they get, they are cut above the first joint, which has no juice ; the leaves on both sides are plucked off ;  
the

---

\* Boiling water. The tree is the candleberry myrtle, *myrica cerifera*. Linn. F.



the canes are made up into bundles, and brought to the mill, where they are crushed between two wooden cylinders, covered with steel. A negro puts the canes between the cylinders, which press all the juice out, which is received in a great hollow, from whence it goes through a leaden pipe into a reservoir, which leads it into the place where the ovens are, which are destined to boil it in great boilers. When the juice is refined, it is poured into another boiler; it must be continually stirred, and boiled till it has a proper consistency; and when the sugar is got to the first state of perfection, it is put into forms of earthen ware, in order to be refined; it acquires the second degree of perfection by the opening being covered with clay to prevent the air from acting upon the sugar, and that it may not harden too much before it is refined by the separation of syrups and melasses.

It is with the scum of sugar that they make taffia or kill-devil. This liquor is prepared as brandy is in *France*; and goes through the still. The *Europeans in America* prefer it to brandy for curing of wounds. They likewise make rum with it.

In

In the country of the *Illinois* there is a little shrub, about three feet high, which bears a fruit of the size of a small apple, and of the taste of citrons. The woods there likewise contain chefnuts, and hazel-nuts of the same kind as in *France*.

*Louisiana* abounds with good simples; among them is the *ginseng*, the root of which is an excellent restorative, *jalap*, *rhubarb*, *snake-root*, *sarsaparilla*, and *St. John's wort*\*, of which they make an excellent oil for healing of wounds. The following is the Indian doctor's method of making the oil. They take an earthen pot, and put the flowers of *St. John's wort* in it, and some bear's oil above it; the pot or vase is well stopped up, and exposed to

• VOL. I.

A a

the

\* *Ginseng* is the plant so much in request in China; it is *Panax quinquefolium*, Linn. See Osbeck's *Voy. to China*, vol. i. p. 222. and Kalm's *Travels into North America*, vol. iii. p. 114. and Catesby's *Nat. Hist. of Carolina*, app. t. 16. — *Jalap* is the *Mirabilis* of Linnæus, there are several species of it. — *Rhubarb* is the *Rheum* Linn. but probably not the true one. — *Snake-root*, perhaps the *Polygala Senega*, Linn. or else an *Aristolochia*. — *Sarsaparilla*, *Smilax sarsaparilla*, Linn. — *St. John's wort*, *Hypericum*, Linn. there are many plants of this genus in *North America*; and it is among the *desiderata* of the botanist to know what species are employed for medicinal uses. F.

the morning sun; the heat concentrated in the vase turns the oil of a red colour, and gives it an agreeable smell, which cures and purifies all kinds of wounds. There are even plants which have the virtue of serving as counter-poisons; but it is a rare and precious gift to man to know them, and to know how to make a proper use of them; the Creator has not granted this knowledge to all men. There are numerous simples proper for cleansing the mats of blood, and of which the Indians have a peculiar knowledge.

There are forests of *sassafras* trees\*, the wood of which is used in physic, and for dying; there is likewise the *copal* tree †, whose gum is an excellent balsam, equal in goodness to the balsam of Peru; the animals which are wounded by hunters, cure themselves by rubbing against the tree from which this balsam exudes, which has an aromatic smell. The *Indians* have in their huts bitter gourds and calabashes, of which latter they make a pectoral syrup; *maiden-hair*, which is a good pectoral medicine, and the *cas-*  
*sine*,

---

\* Sassafras-tree grows all over North America, it is *Laurus sassafras*, Linn.

† Copal tree grows only in the southern part of North America, *Rhus copallinum*, Linn.

*five*, which is a good diuretic\*. When the dose is strong, it excites a kind of convulsions; which, however, cease immediately. The *Alli-kamon* Indians call it the *liquor of valour*. The natives of *America* value their simples more than all the gold of *Mexico* and *Peru*.

You find several sorts of curious animals in *Louisiana*, which are unknown in *Europe*.

The wild ox is very large and strong; the French and the Indians make various uses of it; they eat its flesh, which they salt or dry; they make coverings of its hide. The wild bull is covered with a very fine wool, with which they make good matresses; of its tallow they make candles, and its pizzles afford cords to the Indian bows. The Indians work its horns, and make them into *migouens* or spoons, and into powder-horns.

A a 2

The

---

\* Bitter gourds, *Coloquintes*, *Cucumis colocynthis*, Linn.—Calabashes, *Cucurbita lagenaria*, Linn.—Maiden-hair, *Adiantum pedatum*, Linn. grows all over *North America*, from *Canada* down to *Virginia*, and is much esteemed as a medicinal herb. See *Kalm's Trav. to North Amer.* vol. iii. p. 113.—Caffine is the *Prinos glaber*, Linn. mentioned in Letter XVI. p. 249. F.

The wild ox has a bunch or hump on its back \* like a camel. It has long hair on the head like a goat, and wool on its body like sheep, which the Indian women spin into threads.

On going towards the head of the river *Missouris*, you find all sorts of wild beasts. The wild goats and their young ones are very common at certain seasons †. These animals are very lively and pretty; the females have double furrows or ringlets to their horns, and are not so big as ours: the French that eat of them have assured me, that the young venison was as good  
as

\* The hump is situated on the shoulders. The animal has been described by *Linnaeus* under the name of *Bos bison*, and drawn by *Catesby* in his *Nat. Hist. of Carolina*, app. t. 20. and in *Mr. Pennant's Synopsis of Quadrupeds*, p. 8. t. II. f. 2. F.

† This animal seems to be of the antelope kind, perhaps the *Temamasama* of *Hernandez*, an animal which hitherto has not been noticed by our zoologists. It seems not to be an animal belonging to the goat kind, on account of the double ringlets or *cornichons* mentioned by the author. This would be perhaps a new animal; and however it be, it will deserve the attention of our natural historians. And as the English dominions now extend to the river *Mississippi*, it would certainly be worth while to describe the animals upon that river, and those that fall into it. F.

as the best mutton. As the *Indians* of these parts do not use our muskets, they kill them with arrows; for these animals feed in the mountains, and when they are wounded they cannot climb so easily, and by that means the *Indians* catch them.

The hunters have likewise told me, that they had found a large kind of eagle in the woods, of the species called the *royal eagle* \*.

I think it my duty to mention to you the singular manner in which the *Indians* hunt and take these birds, which the northern nations esteem very much, because they adorn their calumets of peace with eagle's feathers, which they call *feathers of valour*.

This kind of hunting is reserved for the diversion of old warriors, as it requires no exercise. The old man who intends to take eagles, first of all examines the places which are most frequented by them; after that, he brings flesh, the entrails of animals or dead snakes to those spots, and fastens these baits to some fixed wood. The

A a 3

first

---

\* The royal eagle is the *Falco Chrysaetos*, Linn. or *golden eagle*, Penn. Br. Zool. fol. 61. tab. A. & in 8vo vol. i. p. 121. F.

first eagle that comes there eats of it, grows familiar with the place, and attracts others of his species thither, that greedily dispute the prey with each other. Then the old man digs a kind of *nicks* or hollow at the top of the hill; he makes a chimney or vent to it which he stops up with a bundle of faggots, on which he places the baits: he suffers the bird to eat its fill; then he puts his hands, which he has wrapt in a little sack of leather through some straw under the faggots; takes hold of the eagle's legs, pulls it down, wraps it in his ox-hide, and so kills it. If he is lucky enough to take five or six of them, he is content, because the feathers are an article of trade throughout *North-America*. This way of hunting is not very troublesome: the baits are taken together by the old man's children, and the women send him victuals.

You likewise see hares\* and white bears whose skin is very fine and soft.† The *tygers* of Louisiana differ from those of Africa and South America,

---

\* The American hares are already declared by *Prof. Kalm*, vol. p. 105. to differ from the European ones; so that is improper to think the American ones to be the same F.

† The white bear here mentioned, cannot be the great Polar

rica, because they have no spots. † They take the roe-deer as cats do mice. As to the *tyger-cats*. § they kill the wild oxen in the following manner. They get upon a tree, in a little path where the oxen are used to go to the river; and as they come by, the tyger-cats fall upon the necks of the oxen, bite through their throats and

A a 4

kill

*lar bear*, Penn. Synn. Quad. p. 192. to 20. f. 1. as this latter is only to be met with in the most frigid parts of our globe; and the soft hair here mentioned will not admit to think of the polar bear, whose hair is like bristles. The common black bear is sometimes found quite white in Siberia, and therefore it is not improbable that some of these white bears are found in the interior parts of *North America*. Besides this, I find it necessary, here to observe, that the *black Virginia bear* seems to me to be a species different from our European bears, my reasons for this opinion are these: *first*, the European bear has never so black a coat as the *Virginian*, *secondly*, the snout of the *Virginian* is longer, and the head smaller than in our European ones; *thirdly*, the European bear is more clumsy than the *Virginian*. F.

† The North American tyger is the *Cuguatara* of Margrave, or the *brown Cat*. Penn. Syn. quad. p. 179. In South America it is immensely fierce on account of the heat of the climate, and mistakenly called a lion. F.

§ The American tyger-cat is the *pichou du sud* mentioned in *Kalm's Travels*, vol. 3. p. 275, and Penn. Syn. quad. *Cayenne Cat*. p. 182.



kill them; their strength and their horns are rendered useless by this treachery.

The *wood rat* or *Indian-rat* is of the size of an European cat; its head is like the head of a fox, it has feet like a monkey, and the tail of a rat.\* This animal is very curious; I once killed a female that had seven young ones; what is most surprising is to see them all stick fast to the teats, where they grow, and continue till they are able to run about; then they drop into a membrane that forms a pouch: those young ones which I saw were as big as new-born mice; nature has furnished the female with this pouch under the belly, which is covered with hair, as a retreat for her young ones, when they are pursued, by means of which the mother can save them and carry them off. Their flesh tastes like that of a sucking pig; their hair is whitish, and they have likewise a down or wool like the beaver. This pretended rat, lives in the woods upon the seeds of beech-trees, upon chestnuts, walnuts, and acorns. I have often eaten of them on my voyages: their fat is very white and fine; a fine pomatum or unguent is made of it for the Hemorrhoids.

Here

---

\* This is the Virginian *Opossum*. *Penn. Syn. quad.* p. 294. and *Didelphis marsupialis*. *Linn.*

Here is likewise an animal, which they call the *wood-cat*; it is of the size of a fox, and nothing but its tail is like that of a cat. This creature is very fond of oysters; it resembles a marmot in its figure; and may be tamed like a dog, licking and fawning upon its master, whom it follows every where; it takes its food with its paws, like a monkey. I believe these were the *dumb dogs* which the Spaniards found, when they discovered the Antilles or Caribee islands.\*

There are four sorts of squirrels in Louisiana; large, black, red, grey, and little ones of the size of little rats; the latter are called flying squirrels, on account of a membrane which joins their four legs, and which they extend in jumping from one tree to another.†

The *French* and the *Indians* have often told me that the snakes have the power of fascinating squir-

\* This animal here called *wood-cat* is common all over the British colonies in America, and known by the name of *Raccoon*, see Penn Syn. quad, p. 199. *Ursus luscus*. Linn. and Kalm's Travels into North America, vol. i. t. 2. p. 96, 208. F.

† Black squirrel, *sciurus niger*. Linn.—red squirrel *sciurus striatus*. Linn.—grey squirrel, *sciurus cinereus*. Linn.—flying squirrel, *sciurus volans*. Linn. F.

squirrels; this I wished to see with my own eyes. I cannot avoid communicating my observations on this subject to you. I was once hunting at the *Illinois*, in a wood which abounded with hazelnuts, which is a very nice food for squirrels; they were likewise very plentiful there; I heard upon a tree, under which I stood, the sad cry of a squirrel which seemed frightened; I did not know what ailed it; at last I perceived a snake hung over a branch of the tree, looking upwards, waiting for its prey; and the unhappy squirrel, after leaping from branch to branch, fell into the mouth of the snake, which swallowed it.

Without entering into a physical detail, I imagine the squirrel was fascinated by the snake in the following manner. The antipathy of the squirrel, makes it look upon the snake as fastened to the tree, when it sees it thus immoveable, and hung upon a branch; therefore instead of remarking that it is only a snare, laid by its adversary, it jumps from branch to branch, as it were to insult the snake; when by jumping round the reptile, the latter sees it near enough to dart upon, seize and swallow it.† Many authors pretend

---

† This is a very ingenious explication, but it supposes, that we must attribute to the squirrel nicer feelings, than animals

pretend that the snakes have an attractive power.

The cunning of snakes is admirable; I have seen some, which perceiving that I looked at them, did not stir at all, in order to make me believe they were not there, and always continued in the same attitude; but as soon as I went aside to get a stick or stone to crush their heads, the snakes made off and I did not find them again when I returned. This is an experiment I have often made in the deserts which I have gone through, and where these animals are common.

There are many sorts of them, of which the most remarkable is the *rattle-snake*, having four or five round bones, at the end of the tail, which make a kind of noise by rubbing against one another, similar to the noise of a child's rattle. The Indian women pound this rattle and swallow it when they are going to lye-in, because they pretend that they can by its assistance bring forth without pain. The fat of the rattle-snake makes an

---

mals in general and squirrels in particular have; another method to account for this pretended fascination, see in *Kalm's Travels* I. p. 319. note. F

an excellent unguent for the rheumatic pains; this unguent penetrates into the body, to the very bones.

It is generally believed that the number of *vertebrae* in the rattle encreases with the age of the snake; I have seen some rattle-snakes so big, as to be able to eat a whole roe-deer, by sucking it little by little.

There is another kind of serpent, which they call the whipper, *fouetteur*; it is red on the belly and black on the back; it is sometimes about twenty feet long, and when it finds any body in the water, it twines round him so violently as to take away his breath, and drown him.\*

That snake which is called the *whistler* is about two feet long, but is so much more dangerous, because it is not so easily seen, being very little; so that the Indians and negroes often tread upon and are bitten by it: it has a prodigious wide mouth and when angry, it whistles at a terrible rate,

---

\* This snake is represented by *Catesby nat. hist. of Carol.* II. 46. It might be called *coluber erythrogaster*, for Catesby calls it the *copper-bellied-snake*. The circumstance here mentioned, relative to its twisting round people in the water, and its enormous size are both new. F.

rate, and therefore the Indians call him *ho-huy*, that is, *whistler*. During my voyage to *Tombek-bé*, a whistler hidden under the leaves, bit a soldier of my detachment, who trod upon its tail; the soldier was barefoot, and the snake was so angry that it got hold of his big toe and would not let go its hold. I was very uneasy and sorry to see this soldier exposed to perish he being my interpreter; I applied to an Indian doctor who accidentally went by the place, where we were. He took a powder out of a little sack, and blew it through a tube upon the snake's head, which died instantly; he put another powder upon the wound, which prevented the poison from taking its effect; he likewise gave some of it in water to the patient, who was quite well after. I recompensed this juggler very handsomely; I wished likewise to know his secret, but he would not teach it me, and acted like a quack telling me haughtily that the master of life had communicated it to him alone.\*

The

---

\* It is highly probable that this powder, was of the root or whole plant of the *aristolochia unguicida* a Mexican plant, which probably grows likewise in *Louisiana*, and according to Dr. *Jacquin* is an infallible remedy against the snakes, for these animals are actually fascinated and even killed by it. In Car-

There are very large and long *crocodiles* or *alligators* in some parts of the river *Mississippi*; they are so carnivorous, that if they find a man asleep on the land, they carry him into the water and devour him, though they are else very cowardly, and run off as soon as one walks towards them; it seldom happens that they eat a man, because it is so easy to escape from them; they pursue those that fly from them, and are very formidable in the water. The alligator is the most horrid animal in nature and I cannot without horror remember that which had almost carried me into the river of *Tombekbé*; I thought I saw the devil just come out of hell, and I believe he could not be better represented than under that hideous form; its back is covered with impenetrable

---

Carthagenæ the Indians chew the root of this *Aristolochia*, and mix its juice with the saliva; if one drop of this mixture is put into the snake's mouth, it inebriates it, and you may handle the snake as you please; if two or three drops are forced in; and they reach the snake's stomach, convulsions immediately ensue, and the reptile dies. The Indian who shewed Dr. Jacquin this method, likewise informed him that he had been thrice bit by snakes, and had always cured the wound by using the *Aristolochia* both internally and externally. The plant itself has so nauseous a smell, that it is always avoided by snakes, and causes, when chewed, vomiting even to men. See Jacquin's Hist. Select. Stirp. Americæ. p. 232. t. 144. F.

ble scales, almost as strong as oyster-shells, resisting the force of a ball from a musket. It is difficult to hurt an alligator any where except in the eye. They are numerous in the *red river*: they are torpid during the cold weather, and lie in the mud\* with their mouths open, into which the fish enter as into a funnel, and can neither advance nor go back. The Indians then get upon their backs and kill them by striking their heads with hatchets, and this is a kind of diversion for them.

Here are likewise frogs of an extraordinary size, whose croaking exceeds the roaring of a bull. On my voyage from Mobile to New Orleans, I touched at the Horn Island and found a shell fish there, which the Indians call *Naminaté*, which means *Sea Spider*; it was petrified. Its outward covering consisted of a more shining varnish than the Chinese; its eyes were petrified and hard as diamonds. This shell fish is of the  
size

---

\* This circumstance of the alligator's being torpid during winter, is quite new, and very remarkable for natural historians. It seems almost all the class of animals called *amphibia* by Dr. *Linnaeus*, when found in cold climates, grow torpid during winter. F.



size and figure of a barber's basin turned upside down, and has a very sharp tail about ten inches long, and they say it is dangerous to be stung by it\*:

The higher parts of *Louisiana* contain beavers and others; the Indians say that these beavers have been expelled by their brethren from *Canada*, because they were too lazy to join with them in constructing the habitations which those animals make in common, and the dikes, to alter the bed of rivers, all which they contrive and execute with great art and industry.

The *Karancro*, a bird of prey, is of the shape and size of a turkey †, and the most voracious  
bird

\* This shell-fish is now in the Marquis *de Marigny's* cabinet of Natural Curiosities.

This rare animal is nothing else than the king's crab, common in the seas all round *America* and the *West-Indies*; *monoculus Polyphemus*. Linn. These animals are employed in *New-York* to feed pigs with, and the ingenious gentleman, who communicated this remark, adds, sometimes it is eaten even by the two legged pigs. F.

† Hence it is called *Turkey Buzzard* by *Catesby*, *Carol.* I. t. 6.----It is the *Carrion Vulture*, *Forster's N. Amer. Animals*, p. 8. and *Vultur Aura*, *Linn.*

bird that ever was known; it follows the hunters and likewise the convoys that travel to their different stations. They wait in flights, like ravens, for the decampment; and then they come and eat greedily all that has been left there, after which they go on, towards the new camp. They eat dead corpses; their feathers are black, and the soft downy feathers under the wings, have the quality of stopping the blood.

The *Flamingo* is of the same size, the end of its wings is black, the back white, and the belly flame-coloured\*.

There are stares of two kinds; the least are of the size of the European ones: they are so common that a hundred of them are often killed at one shot; they are very good to eat but the inhabitants are obliged to guard their crops of maize and rice, which otherwise would be entirely eaten up by these birds; they are as black as jet, and have the tip of the wing of a fine bright red; their feathers are very fine, and the ladies

VOL. I.

B b

wear

---

\* Flamingo, *Phœnicopterus ruber*. Linn.

wear muffs, and linings to their dresses of them\*.

Here are parrots and parroquets, and fine jays in great abundance: in the country of the *Missouris* there are magpies, only different from the European ones by their plumage, their black and white colours being shaded; the Indians make ornaments for their hair of them.

The eyes are taken with the beauty of nature unassisted by art; here she appears as she came from the hands of the Creator, before the fall of man. The ear of the traveller is enchanted by the songs of the birds, and especially those of the *mocking* birds, which are fond of being in his company, and seem formed on purpose to make him forget the fatigues and tediousness of the journey. Indeed as soon as the mocking bird perceives a man, he perches near him, and sings very agreeably, flying from place to place; and in a word, this bird is inimitable; it settles at the top of a tree, and mocks or mimics all the

---

\* These are the *red-winged stars* or *maize thieves* mentioned and drawn in *Kalm's Travels*, Vol. II. p. 74. *Oriolus phœniceus*. Linn.

the other birds, he likewise imitates the mew-  
ing of a cat. The mocking bird sometimes  
comes to the towns and houses, and appears en-  
chanted and pleased when one plays on any  
instrument and even joins the concert; it is of  
the size of a stare, and of a bluish grey colour:  
it is easily tamed, if taken young \*.

The *Pope* is of a bright blue round the head;  
on the throat it is of a fine red, and on the  
back of a gold green colour, it sings very finely  
and is of the size of a canary bird †.

The *Cardinal bird* is quite red, having the  
throat black, and a crest of feathers on its  
head, its bill is strong and red; it is a kind of  
sparrow, which is very fond of men, and comes  
to the size of a lark, but whistles during summer  
like a black-bird ‡.

B b 2

The

\* Mocking bird, *Turdus Orpheus* Linn. Kalm's Travels,  
Vol. II. p. 90. F.

† *Pope* is the male of the *Emberiza Ciris* Linn. known by  
the name of painted Finch. F.

‡ Cardinal bird is the *Loxia Cardinalis*, Linn. F.

The *Bishop* is blue mixed with purple and of the size of a linnet\*.

The gold-finch is quite yellow, with the tips of the wings black †.

There is a bird they call the *Harlequin*, because it is varied with many colours, and another called the *Swiss*, because it is red and blue; the last three species only come to the *Illinois* in summer.

The *humming bird* is no bigger than a large beetle, and painted with many bright and changing colours; it lives upon the sweet juice of flowers as bees do; its nest is made of a very fine cotton or woolly substance, and suspended on the branch of a tree ‡. There are numberless unknown birds, which would make the account too long.

I have seen butterflies of great beauty; I found two on my voyages (that have been eaten up

---

\* Bishop, *Tanagra Episcopus* Linn.

† Goldfinch, *Fringilla tristis*, Linn.

‡ Humming bird, *Trochilus Colubris*, Linn.

up by worms) the like of which I never saw; I never beheld any thing more magnificent! it seemed as if the author of nature had been pleased to throw upon their wings the finest and most vivid colours; the finest and purest gold appeared mixed among the other colours with admirable symetry.

These butterflies were probably carried to the *Akanzas* by a sudden storm, for in the whole space of a thousand leagues which I have gone through, I have never found their equals. I desired some Indians, of the *Osages* nation, who live near the mines of *St. Barbe*, to bring me some of these butterflies: they answered, that in the country where they were to be found, the inhabitants were very ferocious, and had merely the forms of men.

Here are various sorts of ducks, but the most curious are those which perch on trees, having pretty strong claws at the end of their palmated toes; they build their nests upon those trees which lean over rivers or lakes, and when their young ones are hatched, they go into the water immediately. As to their feathers, they are shaded with the finest colours: the male has a crest upon its head. These ducks are the best

to eat, they feed in the woods on acorns and  
beech seeds.\*

On the banks of rivers there are birds called  
*Egrets*; they are exceeding white and the ladies  
employ their feathers as *aigrettes* †.

The *Pelican*, which the inhabitants of the  
country call great throat, on account of a  
pouch he has under his throat, is as white  
and as large as a swan, its bill is about twelve  
inches long; they make muffs of its skin, and  
precipitate the paste of indigo with its fat.  
This paste is made from a plant, the grain  
of which comes from the East Indies, for dying  
blue ‡.

The spoon-bill §, having a bill like a *Spatula*,  
an apothecary's instrument so called. There is  
likewise a bird called *Leucis-bill*, whose beak is  
actually

\* This is the *Ames amherst*, Linn.

† Egrets, *Ardea alba*? Linn. the great white heron?  
Forst. North. Am. Animals, p. 14.

‡ Pelican, *Pelecanus Onocrotalus*, B. Linn.

§ Spoon-bill, *Platalea Leucorodia*, Linn.

actually like a lancet. It is impossible to finish this matter, it would require whole volumes; I leave this detail to our learned countrymen, M. *de Buffon* and *Daubenton*, who have undertaken this vast work. I wish you may be content with this short account.

I am, SIR, &c.

*At New Orleans the 1st  
of June, 1762.*

P. S. Before I conclude my letter I shall speak to you of two precious plants in Louisiana; which are the *Indigo* and the *Cotton*.

Indigo is a plant resembling the *Broom* or *Genista* very much. A kind of it is growing in Louisiana spontaneously, and commonly upon hills and near woods. That which is cultivated is brought from the West India isles. There are two crops of it every year. It grows to the height of two feet and a half. When it is ripe, it is cut, and brought into the place where it is to rot; this is a building twenty feet high, without walls; but only supported by posts. In it they make three troughs, one above another

B b 4

other



other; the lowest is made so, that the water it contains, may run out of it, and out of the building. The second stands on the edge of this, so that the water it contains falls into the first, and the third is disposed in the same manner with regard to the second. The indigo leaves are put into the uppermost trough; with a certain quantity of water, and must putrify in it. The man who is at the head of the manufacture examines the indigo from time to time, and when he sees it is time to empty this trough, he turns the cock, and the water runs into the second trough; there is a proper time which must be well observed for doing this operation, for if the plant remains too long in this putrefying place, the Indigo becomes black.

As soon as the water is in the second trough, it is beaten till the overseer thinks it sufficient; it is use and habit by which one learns to seize upon the true moment. When the water has been well beaten, it is left to settle: the indigo forms a kind of sediment at the bottom of the trough; the water above it must have time to become clear, and is afterwards drawn off by means of several cocks placed above each other.

The

The indigo is taken off likewise, and put into sacks made of the common sackcloth; where the remaining water may run off. After this it is spread upon boards, and when dry is cut out into little square pieces, put into barrels, and so sent to the Indies. It will have the same effect as the indigo mentioned above. In order to have seeds, it is necessary only to let so many plants grow up as are wanted; it grows more or less tall according to the nature of the soil, which ought to be light; in the West India islands they have four crops a-year, on account of the great heat; but in Louisiana they cannot have above three; the indigo in the latter place is likewise not so good as in the former. The cotton shrub is no bigger than a rose bush, but spreads more. It does not succeed so well in strong or rich grounds as in others; therefore that which grows in Lower Louisiana is inferior in goodness to that which is cultivated in the higher parts of that province. The cotton shrub is no bigger than a rose bush, but spreads more. It does not succeed so well in strong or rich grounds as in others; therefore that which grows in Lower Louisiana is inferior in goodness to that which is cultivated in the higher parts of that province. The cotton shrub is no bigger than a rose bush, but spreads more. It does not succeed so well in strong or rich grounds as in others; therefore that which grows in Lower Louisiana is inferior in goodness to that which is cultivated in the higher parts of that province.

~~The indigo plant is, with Dr. Elnéer, the Indigofera tinctoria, and the indigo mentioned to grow spontaneously in Louisiana is the Sophora tinctoria, Linn.; which, with a proper management, is said to afford as good indigo as the celebrated Anil of the Indies and Egypt. F.~~

The cotton of this country is of the species called white cotton of Siam. It is neither so fine nor so long as the silky cotton, but it is however very white and very fine. Its leaves are of a lively green, and resemble spinach very much; the flower is of a pale yellow, the seed contained in the capsule is black, and oval like a kidney-bean: it is commonly planted in such grounds as are not yet fit for tobacco or for indigo; for the latter requires the greatest care.

The shrub is cut down to the ground every two or three years, because they say it bears more after it. The pistil of the flower changes into an acuminate capsule, of the size of a pigeon's egg, green at first, then brown, and at last almost black, dry and brittle.

When the cotton is ripe, the heat of the sun makes it expand; the capsule that contained it opens in three or four places with a little noise. Then it must be gathered quickly, lest it should be lost. Each capsule contains five, six, or seven seeds, of the size of pease; the cotton sticks to them, and it is therefore difficult to get the seeds out, except in time and with patience; for  
this

this reason, however, many planters have been disgusted with the culture of cotton \*.

I have not mentioned tobacco to you; it is likely that it is a native of the country, because the tradition of the Indians, or their *ancient word*, tells us, that they have always employed it to smoke in their calumets of peace. I shall conclude with an observation that has already been made, and which it is good to repeat, till somebody tries the experiment. The climate of *Louisiana*, and the hilly parts of that country, give reason to believe, that it would not be difficult to plant tobacco there; the colonists would reap great advantages from it, and the neighbourhood of *Mexico* would procure them a quick and certainly an useful consumption.

---

\* The people in the English colonies, and in China, employ an instrument which separates the pods from the cotton with great ease. F.

# TRAVELS THROUGH

THE NORTH-WEST PART OF AMERICA, &c.



AND A HISTORY OF THE INDIAN NATIONS

IN THAT PART OF THE CONTINENT

BY

J. K. PAULING, ESQ.

OF THE BAR AT LAW IN GREAT BRITAIN

AND OF THE SOCIETY OF THE SACRED ARCHBISHOP

OF CANONICAL JURISCONSULTS

IN THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

IN TWO VOLUMES

LONDON, Printed by J. B. ALLEN, in Pall-mall

1791.

## LETTER XXI.

To the same.

*Reflections on the Population of America; that Contingent has not been unknown to the Ancients; it seems that it is connected with Asia on the Side of Tartary, from whence the People that first peopled it must naturally be supposed to have come. A Digression upon the Way of preserving one's Health in America.*

S I R,

Expect to set out for *France* very soon; and I take advantage of an opportunity that offers to write to you, before I leave this part of the world. After giving you an idea of the manners, customs, and of the history of the people with whom I have been during my voyages, I do not believe I could better conclude my narrative, than by reflections

tions on the population of this immense continent; but this matter is so obscure, that we cannot now flatter ourselves to clear it up: many learned writers have already attempted to throw light upon it, but they have not succeeded: modern philosophy has endeavoured, with as little success, to draw advantages from it, and its reasonings and opinions have not even been able to seduce weak geniuses.

By reflecting attentively upon the old writers, every thing seems to convince us, that *America* was not entirely unknown to them. *Diodorus Siculus* seems to have spoken of it with precision enough: Father *Laffiteau* quotes a passage from that historian, and adds his reflections to clear it up. The *Phenicians*, if we may believe the Greek author, after sending several colonies upon the coast of the Mediterranean, being enriched by their trade, did not go far beyond the columns of Hercules; that vast and unknown ocean, which they discovered on coming through the streights of *Gibraltar*, inspired them with a kind of horror, which they surmounted only by degrees: some bold navigators ventured out upon the ocean afterwards; but sailing along the coast of *Africa*, a violent tempest, of several days duration, carried them to an isle of very  
great

great extent, at a great distance to the westward. At their return they were very ready to speak of their discovery, they embellished their accounts, with all the fictions familiar to travellers of all countries, and at all times. When the *Tyrrenians* became the masters of the sea, they were willing to make a settlement there; but the *Carthagonians* opposed it, fearing that their countrymen, attracted by what was said of this land, should leave their country in order to settle there; they likewise considered this new-discovered country as a last resource for themselves, in case some disaster should have overturned their empire.

To this passage of *Diodorus Siculus*, Father *Laffiteau* adds one of *Pausanias*. This writer was inquiring, whether there were any satyrs; one *Euphemus*, who was born in *Caria*, told him, that, in a voyage of his, he had been carried by a storm to the extremities of the ocean, where he had seen several isles, which the sailors called *Satyrides*. The people that inhabited them were of a red colour, and had tails; the sailors trembled, and endeavoured to avoid them; but the contrary winds forced them to come near the shore; the savages invested the vessel, and the  
crew,

srow, in order to get rid of them, were obliged to deliver a woman to them.

Father *Laffiteau's* reflection will appear very just to you. "The description of these islands," says he, "perfectly fits to the *Caribes*, "who were masters of the Antilles, commonly "called the *Caribee* islands, out of most of "which they have been expelled by the Euro- "peans in these latter times. The complexion "of these people is very red, and it is naturally "so; it being less the effect of the climate, "than of the imagination of the mothers, who, "finding the red colour beautiful, transmit it "to their children \*; their flesh is likewise arti- "ficially red, for they paint themselves every "day with *rocou*, which serves instead of vermi- "lion to them, and appear as red as blood by "it. As to what concerns the imagination of "the sailors, who thought they beheld satyrs, "it only was the effect of fear, that made them  
" take

---

\* Every one will not agree with the Jesuit upon the effect of the mother's imagination on their children: the different colours of men from the several parts of the world, offer many more difficulties. All that has been written on the subject has not explained this phenomenon; men who were originally white, must have become black, red, and brown, (bronzed), by the union of several causes.



“take false tails for real ones; almost all the  
 “barbarous nations of *America* wore this orna-  
 “ment, especially when they went to war.”

The similarity which has been observed to exist between the manners of several *American* nations, and those of some of the oldest nations on our continent, seems to demonstrate that this country was not unknown in ancient times, and chiefly proves that the known or old parts furnished the new one with men; how could that similarity be explained, if this had not happened? How great a resemblance is there in the religion, manners, and customs of the *Indians*, with those of some ancient nations. These details will always destroy most of the bold systems which have been started on the population of *America*. If they were a colony of people escaped from the deluge, the universality of which is in vain contested, they would have brought anti-diluvian customs into *America*. Those nations that were born after this dreadful punishment, do they resemble their ancestors that were buried under the floods? We have not yet light enough upon this subject to make a just comparison; we can answer nothing to those who say, *That the Almighty hand, which sowed plants and fruits in all parts of the world, could likewise place*

*men there.* An ingenious phrase is not always a reason : no one disputes this power of the Creator ; but he has been pleased to teach us himself, that it was not his will to people the world so, and that he gave existence to two creatures, who were the origin of the whole human race.

All these opinions rest upon the course that men must have taken, in order to come from the old world to the new ; and it is upon this difficulty that most authors found their writings. A more exact and extensive knowledge of our globe would annihilate all these difficulties. It is very probable, that there is a passage which unites *Asia* to *America* ; I have already said something of it to you, in speaking of the elephants bones found in one of the countries I have gone through : this is not a new opinion ; this conjecture has been made long ago. “ *America*,” says Father *Laffiteau*, “ can be come at  
 “ in different places, and accordingly it may  
 “ have been peopled from all sides ; this is be-  
 “ yond a doubt ; it is but at a little distance  
 “ from the southern unknown countries ; and  
 “ in the north, *Greenland*, which is *perhaps* con-  
 “ tiguous to this new continent, is not far from  
 “ *Lapland*. Those parts of *Asia* which bound it  
 “ towards the land of *Yeso*, probably make but

“ one continent with, or are only at a little distance from *America*, if the streights that are supposed to be there go to the Tatarian sea : the ocean which surrounds *America* almost entirely, is strewed with isles, both in the northern and southern seas. Men may have gone from isle to isle, either by shipwreck or by mere chance.”

This author alledges many reasons to prove, that *North America* joins to *Tartary*, or to some country contiguous to it ; the following is a very singular one : You know that *ginseng* is originally a native of the *Mantcheoux Tartary*, the *Chinese* or *Tartarian* name of it signifies, the *thighs of a man*. The *Americans*, who were long acquainted with it, and made use of it, called it *garel-oguen*, which has the same signification. If *America* did not join to *Tartary*, or if the latter had not peopled the first, how could their respective inhabitants give names of the same signification to the same plant ? I do not speak here of etymologies of words that have been corrupted, and which are only found by forcing them ; their signification is here in question.

Captain *William Rogers* looks upon it as very probable, that some *Tartarians* passed over into  
*America* :

*America*: he observes, that the ships which annually go from the *Philippines* to *Mexico*, are obliged to steer to the northward, in order to meet with favourable winds, those which rise between the tropics being always contrary to them. He adds, that after passing forty-two degrees of north latitude, sailors often meet with sands and shallows, which seem to indicate that they are near some coasts. He imagines, that these coasts might well be some continent unknown to *Europeans*, and uniting *California* with *Japan*; but should they not rather be the coasts of *Kamtchatka*, or of that new country to the east discovered by Captain *Bering*?

To these observations I shall add an abstract of a relation, published in the *Mercure Galant* for November 1711. I shall quote the fact, without making any reflections to confirm or contradict it; the author pretends to have got it out of a manuscript found in *Canada*.

Ten men resolved to go out upon discoveries, with a view to get riches; they embarked in three canoes, and went up the river *Mississippi*. After a long voyage, they found another river which flowed to the south-south-west; they carried their canoes to it, and continued their navigation;

vigation; some time after, they arrived in a country which extended two hundred leagues, and was inhabited by a nation who called themselves *Escaaniba*.

The Frenchmen (for the ten travellers were of that nation) found much gold with these people. Their king pretended to deduce his origin from *Montezuma*; his name was *Agazan*, and he kept a standing army of an hundred thousand men in time of peace. The *Escaaniba* women were white as the *European* women; they and the men of that nation had long ears, to which they fastened gold rings. One of their distinctions was, to let their nails grow: polygamy was permitted among them; they did not pay any attention to their daughters, who lived in the greatest liberty, without any one to watch over their conduct. Their country produced tobacco, various fruits, some common to *Europe* and *India*, and some that were peculiar to it; the rivers abounded with fish; their forests were full of game of every kind, and contained above all a great number of parrots. The capital was situated at six leagues from the river, which they called *Missi*, *Golden river*. They valued gold so little, that they permitted the *French* to take as much as they pleased with them: you may  
con-

conceive, that they made a good use of this permission; each of them took for his share two hundred and forty pounds weight of gold. Their mines were in the mountains, from whence they brought the gold upon rivulets, which were dry during one season of the year.

These people traded with a nation very distant from them; and in order to make the *French* sensible of it, they told them, that it required six months to make the voyage. The adventurers happened to be with the *Escaanibas* at the time when their caravan set out to trade with those strangers; it consisted of three hundred oxen loaded with gold; an equal number of men, armed with lances, bows, arrows, and a kind of daggers, conducted and watched them: they brought back, in exchange for their gold, some iron, steel, lances, and other weapons.

I cannot ascertain in what degree we may trust this account; the adventurers conjectured, that the distant country whither the *Escaanibas* went, was *Japan*; in that case, there must be a communication between *Asia* and *America*; some English writers, without attempting to dispute the authenticity of this account, believe, that the savages went to trade with the inhabitants of

*Kamptchatka*, or of some isle or continent near that peninsula. This communication will never be well ascertained whilst it remains undiscovered\*. Conjectures explain nothing; they give probabilities, but go no further: however, be it as it will, it is very probable that such a communication exists: supposing there are streights that divide these two great parts of the world, they cannot have prevented men from penetrating out of one into the other, by crossing those streights. We must hope, that the ignorance in which we are at present will not last for ever; the discoveries which men shall endeavour to make in the great southern or Pacific ocean, will give us more light on this subject †. If, after  
making

---

\* The modern geographical discoveries, and especially those made by the Russians, sufficiently evince, that the sea entirely divides *Asia* from *America*; there can be no doubt neither of *Japan's* being an isle, and unconnected with the continent of *America*; it is true, however, that the sea which divides *Asia* from *America* near *Cape Tchukshi*, is very narrow, and not a sufficient obstacle to the migration of the nations that inhabit the north-east parts of *Siberia* into *America*; for a further hint concerning the population of that vast continent, see *Kalm's Travels to North America*, vol. iii. p. 125. &c. F.

† When these letters were gone to press, I heard that the English had discovered ten islands in that ocean. There is  
an

making voyages that way, some freights be really found, it is no reason why they should always have been there: earthquakes may have divided the isthmus or neck of land which combined the two continents; many authors attribute the freights of *Gibraltar* to the same kind of event: the Mediterranean, they say, had formerly no communication with the Atlantic; many pretend, that *Great Britain* was joined to *France*; now the sea separates *Dover* and *Calais*: why cannot this be the case with *Asia* and *America* likewise?

The time in which the population of *America* was commenced, is as obscure and indeterminate as the manner in which it was peopled; every thing which is difficult to penetrate excites the curiosity of men; they wish to see something new, and to speak of it, and frequently they

C c 4

give

---

an account of it in the voyage of Commodore *Byron*, who has been so much talked of, and has proved the existence of giants, which was blindly believed by the ancients, rejected as chimerical by the moderns, and now confirmed by new discoveries. The next voyage which the English will make that way, will furnish us with more minute accounts; others will be encouraged to imitate them, and a perfect knowledge of the South Sea will clear up the difficulties concerning the junction of *Asia* and *America*.



give us their own chimerical imaginations as something real. Among the singular opinions which this subject has given rise to, I shall mention that of *Marc Lescarbot*, in his *History of New France*; *Father Laffiteau* shall still be my guide on this occasion, and from his work on the manners of the savage *Americans*, I shall take what I have to say on this matter. “ *Lescarbot* has not scrupled to advance very positively, and in a manner that goes beyond conjecture, that *Noah* was not unacquainted with the western continent, (where *Lescarbot* was born); and that at least he knew it by fame. That, having lived three hundred and fifty years after the deluge, he himself had taken care to people, or rather to re-people that country: that, being a good workman, and an excellent pilot, and being charged to repair the desolation of the earth, he may be supposed to have conducted his children thither; and it may have been as easy to him to have gone through the streights of *Gibraltar* to *New France*, *Cape Verd*, and *Brazil*, as it was to his children to go and settle in *Japan*, or as it was to himself to come from the mountains of *Armenia* into *Italy*, where he founded the *Janiculum* upon the banks of the *Tiber*, if  
“ we

“ we may credit the accounts given by profane  
 “ writers,”

I doubt whether it is necessary to go back to *Noah*, to find the period of the population of *America*; if, as is very probable, the *Tartars* went over into that continent, it must have happened in the following times: a set of people, who are not numerous, do not easily leave the vast country they inhabit; they do not so soon endeavour to separate from each other; they continue together, till, by having multiplied too much, they spread more, or till some other circumstances force them to leave their native country: such researches are of little importance; they are mere matters of curiosity, and the difficulty of satisfying that ought to prevent men from employing their time in them. All that can be asserted with certainty is, that *America* seems to have been inhabited only of late.

*Powell*, an English writer, mentions, in his *History of Wales*, that, in the year 1170, there was a war in that country for the succession to the throne, after the death of Prince *Owen Gwyneth*. A bastard took the crown from the legitimate children; one of the latter, whose name was *Madoc*, embarked in order to make new discoveries;

coveries; directing his course to the westward, he came to a country the fertility and beauty of which were amazing. As this country, was without inhabitants, *Madoc* settled in it; *Hakluit* assures us, that he made two or three voyages to *England* to fetch inhabitants, who, upon the account he gave them of that fine country, went to settle with him.

The English believe, that this prince discovered *Virginia*. *Peter Martyr* seems to give a proof of it, when he says, that the nations of *Virginia*, and those of *Guatimala*, celebrate the memory of one of their ancient heroes, whom they call *Madoc*. Several modern travellers have found ancient British words used by the *North American* nations. The celebrated English Bishop *Nicholson* believes, that the Welch language has formed a considerable part of the languages of the *American* nations; there are antiquaries who pretend, that the Spaniards got their double or guttural *l* (*ll*) from the *Americans*, who, according to the English, must have got it from the *Welch*. I should never have done, if I were to mention all their reasonings to prove the voyage of the *Welch* Prince *Madoc*. The Dutch brought a bird, with a white head, from the streights of *Magellan*, which the natives called  
*Penguin*;

*Penguin*; this word is an old Welch one, and signifies *white head*; from hence they conclude, that the natives originall came from *Wales* \*.

The *English* are not the only people, who, according to our historical romances, went to *America* and settled there: *Bayer* pretends, that the *Normans* were the first Europeans who ventured to sail to that country.

Doctor *Lochner* asserts that a *Bohemian* of a distinguished family went to *Brazil*, and discovered the straits of *Magellan*, before *Columbus* went to the New World; this Bohemian was called *Martin* †. Many German writers who seem

\* This, however, is a wrong supposition; for it appears, that the bird in question has a black and not a white head; but its name is Spanish, and signifies a fat bird, the *Penguin* or rather *Pinguin* being very fat. F.

† Our author mistakes the name of this man for that of his country: he was called *Martin Behaim*, a native of *Nuremberg* in Germany; his father was a noble senator of that city: after studying mathematics, and especially astronomy and geography, under the great mathematician *Joannes Regiomontanus*, he went to the *Netherlands*, then governed by the Princess *Isabella*, daughter to *John I.* of Portugal; he there obtained the command of a ship, fitted out for the purpose of making discoveries: he set sail in 1460, and, sailing

seem to wish that America should bear his name preferably to that of *Americo Vesputti*, have followed this opinion.

Whether these traditions are adopted or rejected, whether they are fabulous or true, it remains incontestible that the *Americans* have the same origin with us; among all their errors, they have preserved some ideas that have a great similarity with those, which have been transmitted to us by writing: I shall mention to you a piece of an English dissertation on the population of *America*,

---

failing to the westward first met with the isle of *Pagal* one of the *Azores*, all which isles were afterwards called the *Flemish* isles from the first inhabitants, which *Martin Behaim* brought thither. He then returned, and obtained two ships, with which he cruized in the atlantic for some time, and at last discovered the fourth part of the world, and even went as far as the straits, now called *Straits of Magellan*; he laid down all his discoveries in a sea chart, which he presented to king *Alphonfus* the fifth, of *Portugal*. This sketch afterwards fell into the hands of *Christopher Columbus*, a *Genoese* who was at *Lisbon*, and first inspired him with a desire of visiting those unknown countries. When he undertook the voyage, he always followed the same course which *Martin Behaim* had laid down on his chart, and performed the voyage in as short a time as is done now. In the noble family of *Behaim* at *Nuremberg*, they still preserve among other curiosities a globe drawn with a pen, and coloured by that able navigator, in which all his discoveries are marked. F.

*America*, in which many *American* opinions are collected, which owe their origin to the truths preserved by *Moses*. “ The *Peruvians* believe, “ that there formerly was a deluge, by which “ all the inhabitants of their continent perished, “ a few excepted, who retired into caverns at “ the top of the highest mountains, and whose “ descendants filled the earth with inhabitants “ again. Some ideas, little different from “ these have been received by the natives of “ *Hispaniola*, according to what *Gemelli Carreri* “ relates. The old histories of *Mexico* likewise “ mention an universal deluge, by which all “ men, one man and woman excepted, perished. “ These two people, according to the *Mexicans*, “ had numerous descendants ; but all their chil- “ dren were dumb, till a pigeon endowed them “ with the power of speech ; they add, that the “ primitive language of the immediate de- “ scendants of the couple who survived the de- “ luge, was split into so many dialects, that it “ was impossible for them to understand each “ other ; which after obliging them to separate, “ contributed to make them people the different “ countries of the earth. Some *American* na- “ tions have a tradition, that all men derive “ their origin from four women, which agrees “ pretty well with the *Mosaic* history, which “ makes

“ makes all the nations descend from *Noah* and  
 “ his three sons. All these traditions manifestly  
 “ shew, that the *Americans* are descendants of  
 “ *Noah*, and that various accounts of the *Mo-*  
 “ *saic* history are even come down to them.  
 “ This is sufficient to overthrow the strange sys-  
 “ tem which attributes ancestors to the *Americans*  
 “ anterior to *Adam*.”

Does not this quotation answer all the argu-  
 ments of those systematic writers, who will give  
 us the fruits of their absurd imagination as  
 truths? Where could the *Americans* get these  
 notions, if they were not all posterior to the de-  
 luge, and descended from nations that had pre-  
 served the tradition? It is easy to explain, that  
 by length of time, by the ignorance and the  
 mutability of the *Indians*, they have immersed  
 true facts, which were committed to their me-  
 mory, in fables. The want of monuments,  
 characters or letters to write down those events,  
 certainly impairs the purity of tradition; as  
 soon as it is transmitted by word of mouth from  
 father to son, it must be much changed after  
 passing through so many generations.

The wars which the *Indians* ever carried on  
 among themselves, have contributed greatly to  
 hinder

hinder population; their small number has certainly been the cause of the nomadic life they lead; they ran through the woods in order to search for game, and settled in all the places where they found food in abundance, leaving them again in order to go further, whenever it began to fail them.

If they were more numerous their wants would increase; it would become more difficult to provide food for them all; this difficulty would open their minds, give them new ideas: they would feel that it was necessary to provide a subsistence more independent from mere chance; the fruits which the earth produces, would teach them to multiply them by cultivation; they would see all the uses of these productions, think of appropriating them to themselves, and succeed in it; in some places we see them already cultivate maize, they would soon cultivate other corn; one kind of knowledge would lead to another: they would settle in the country which they had cultivated, and be no longer such vagabonds as there are now.

The settlement of the *Europeans* in the northern parts has engaged many of these nations to come and settle in their neighbourhood in order



order to get that assistance from them which they want ; the desire which the *Europeans* shew of possessing their furs and the ease with which they can obtain brandy and fire-arms in exchange for them, often excite them to go through the woods and hunt in the extent of two hundred leagues around, in order to get those things, which become real wants to them ; thus they are only apparently fixed ; they preserve their love for a rambling life, and the period of their civilization seems as yet very distant ; perhaps they will destroy each other before they come to it.

This is all that can be asserted with probability on the population of *America* ; my letter would be too long, if I would only mention a hundredth part of what has been said on this subject. The systems and contrary opinions which have been long published, would make considerable volumes ; I have endeavoured to confine myself to curious observations ; those who think the *Tartars* have chiefly furnished *America* with inhabitants, seem to have hit the true opinion ; you cannot believe how great the resemblance of the *Indian* manners is to those of the ancient Scythians ; it is found in their religious ceremonies, their customs and in their food.

food. *Hornius* is full of characteristics, that may satisfy your curiosity in this respect, and I desire you to read him.

I shall now quit all these discussions which ought to finish the account of my voyages, and shall speak of another subject, more useful to the human race, in regard to which observation and experience suffice to instruct us.

As it is the natural desire of man to live long, I hope it will not be foreign to my purpose, to shew in a few words, how one may preserve life and live long in *America*.

I shall therefore finish my letter by a small dissertation on the method of managing one's health. I remember to have read, in the *Holland Gazette* of the 3d of April 1687, that *Frederick Gualdus*, a noble Venetian, has preserved his life to the age of four hundred years; it is pretended, that he was possessed of the universal medicine. He left *Venice* the 7th of March 1686; having his picture with him painted by *Titian*, who was then already dead an hundred and thirty years. I am sure you will agree with me in saying, that exercise and sobriety procure a perfect health. The nations of *America* knew

neither wine nor brandy two hundred and sixty years ago, when the *Europeans* came to them; they lived, as I have already said, on the flesh of wild beasts dried, roasted, or boiled with maize pounded in a mortar made of some hard wood. This food is wholesome, and makes a very good *chyle*. I have lived about two months upon these victuals, going up the river *Mobile* with the *Indians*, and can affirm, that I never enjoyed my health better in my life than at that time. Of all Latin proverbs, this is the best :

*Plures gula occidit, quam gladius.*

Voluptuousness and intemperance in eating and drinking, destroy more men than the sword. Therefore one ought to prescribe to himself a proper regimen of life, especially in the hot countries of *America*.

First of all, great care must be taken to be accustomed to the climate by degrees, and to abstain from eating all kinds of fruit, and drinking all sorts of liquors, till the body is used to it. People who are very replete with blood, may be bled from time to time, to prevent an apoplexy. A gentle purge will sometimes do well; the  
burning

burning heat of the sun must be avoided, and the air at night likewise.

When one has drunk too much wine, it is necessary to take four things; such as lemon, which is very common there; by this means you will neither find yourselves ill, nor be overcome by the vapours which commonly follow. If the quantity of liquor which has been drank heats the body, some refreshing aliments must be taken, but every thing that increases heat must be avoided: spirituous liquors should be drank as little as possible, for they burn the blood, and easily cause a hot fever.

When you have eaten too much, strong liquors are good to strengthen the stomach, and help digestion; but if, on the contrary, it happens that you are heated by drinking too much\*, they would prove very dangerous. Those who are too much addicted to debauchery are almost always tormented with bad dreams, which fatigue them so much as almost to trouble their

D d 2

mind,

---

\* It ought to be remarked, that, since the *Americans* have drank wine and brandy, they have like us shortened their days.

mind, because the fumes of the wine, with which their body is filled, successively excite their imagination. It is known by experience, that sober persons, and those especially who drink water, sleep quietly, their sleep being neither too slight nor too heavy. It appears, from the second chapter of the *Life of Apollonius*, written by *Philostratus*, that at Athens those who were afflicted with bad dreams applied to the priests of the false deities, in order to be rid of them; they ordered them to abstain from wine for three or four days; this cleared their imagination, and produced a cure, which they attributed to their gods.

If, after taking too much food, you are heavy, and your members fatigued, so that too great an abundance of nutritive juice occasions a plenitude in the whole body, and makes you tired; I believe that, in imitation of the *Indians*, sweating is an infallible remedy, when the natural heat is assisted with an exterior one; this remedy is infallible, provided it be applied at the first appearance of the distemper; the *Europeans*, in order to perspire well, get between two blankets, and remain there covered up, the face excepted; they do not get up till they have  
sweated

sweated well, and about an hour after the whole perspiration is performed. If this method of sweating is continued during some days, you find yourself so much eased, that your strength and appetite return, and you are surpris'd to see yourself so light and so nimble; for by the perspiration all the *viscera* are perfectly cleared of all their superfluities, without pain or any violence done to nature, which the ordinary medicines cannot do. In order to be healthy, this ought to be done thrice in the year, *viz.* in spring, autumn, and in winter.

My conclusion is, that diet, perspiration, and sweating compose an universal medicine.

Therefore I say, that nature should direct us in all things; from her we must learn the true means of preserving health, which she orders us to do upon pain of the greatest evils, and even of death. I have already told you, that the frequent exercises of the Indians of *North America*, such as dancing, playing at ball, hunting, fishing, and fighting, increase their natural heat so much, that it drives all the superfluities out of their bodies by perspiration. Why do the peasants

fants live long, and are healthy, without the assistance of physicians! The perpetual labour they are employed in keeps them so; exercise prevents their knowing the gout, gravel, and other infirmities, to which the richer people in *Europe* are subject, on account of the refined taste of their tables, and because they make no more use of their legs than old infirm men. I have known some, who, like Moliere's *Malade imaginaire*, filled their stomach with as many drugs as an apothecary's shop.

It has been observed, in the hot countries of *America*, that the young *Europeans* die sooner there than the old ones; because the former imprudently eat all sorts of fruit, which cause them a dysentery; therefore it is necessary to eat very little of them, till the body is accustomed to the climate, after which, at the expiration of a year, this will cause no further inconveniencies.

By observing these precautions, I will warrant, that people will live longer in this part of the world than in the old one: There are now many people alive in *Louisiana*, who have been there ever since its first settlement. I saw  
a planter

a planter called *Graveline*, aged one hundred and eighteen years, who came hither with M. *d'Iberville*, in 1698; he served in *Canada* as a soldier for about thirty years, in the reign of *Lewis* the Fourteenth.

I am, S I R, &c.

*End of the FIRST VOLUME.*



95.









